A

# PARAPHRASE

On the Four

## EVANGELISTS.

#### WHEREIN

For the Clearer Understanding of the Sacred History, the whole Text and Paraphrase are printed in separate Columns over-against each other.

TOGETHER

With CRITICAL NOTES on the more difficult PASSAGES.

Very Useful for Families.

In Two VOLUMES.

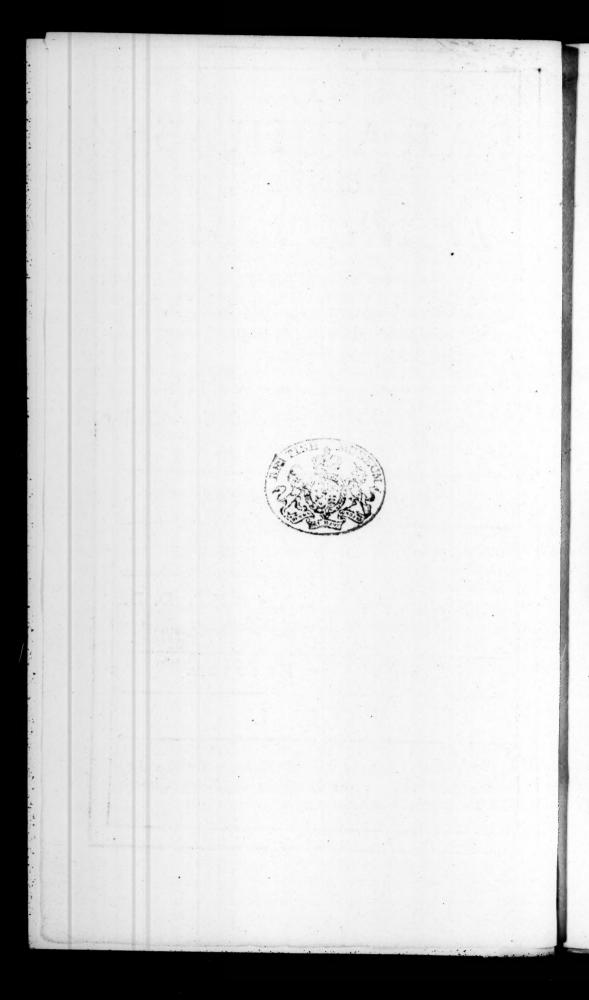
By SAMUEL CLARKE, D. D. Rector of St Fames's Westminster.

The FOURTH EDITION.

### VOL. I.

LONDON: Printed by W. Botham, for JAMES KNAPTON, at the Crown in St. Paul's Church Yard. MDCCXXII.

K Bible. N.J. Gospels.





# TOTHE Most Reverend Father in GOD,

# THOMAS,

Lord ARCH-BISHOP of Canterbury, &c.

May it please your GRACE,

O accept favourably this Paraphrase upon St. Matthew, as an humble Expression of that Duty and Honour, which I, with all good Men, owe to your GRACE, whom the especial Pro-

vidence of GOD has placed in the highest Station of our Church; Where, by your wise Government and pious Example, you support and encourage true Religion and Virtue; which seem to be in great Danger, not only from the bold Pretenders to Atheism and Deism, but even from the many Controversies about smaller Matters, raised and uncharitably managed among Christians, while little regard is had to the great Duties and most essential Parts of Religion.

A 2

THE

The Epistle Dedicatory.

THE Care, Sincerity, and Impartiality with refpect to any Theological Controversies, wherewith I have endeavoured to explain in general, the Doctrine and History of our Saviour, may, I hope, procure me Pardon for the involuntary Errors and Failings in this Performance. For as I cannot, without great Prefumption, suppose it free from Mistakes; so I trust I have no where offered any Interpretation repugnant to the fundamental Articles of our Religion, or the necessary Rules of Holy Life. And that I might not be deceived in Matters of so great Importance, I have (as I thought my self obliged to do) submitted these Papers, before they were made publick, to the View and Censure of some of my Superiours, on whose Judgment I thought I might safely rely.

Now, that GOD may long preserve your GRACE, for the Good and Honour of this Church,

is the constant Prayer of,

My LORD,

Your Grace's

most humble

and obedient Servans,

S. C.

THE



## THE

# PREFACE.



MONG the many excellent Commentaries and Expositions which have been written upon the Books of Holy Scripture, I have not yet seen any, wherein the Text of the New Testament has been fully Paraphrased with Brevity and Plain-

Erasmus's Performance of this Kind, is very eloquent and judicious; But his Explications are large, having frequent Digressions; and in many Places, he indulges allegorical Interpretations; and moreover, the Beauty of his Work is very much lost in our Translation. The judicious and learned Bishop Hall, wrote a pious Exposition upon particular difficult Texts; But because it was only upon particular Texts, the Design it self allowed him not to regard the Transitions, and to make his Paraphrase one continued uninterrupted Discourse. Dr. Hammond has with great Pains collected all the Assistances of ancient and modern Learning, and with great Success applied them to the Explication of the Text of the New Testament: But those who justly admire his great Learning and Skill in Interpreting, yet complain of the obscurity and perplexedness of his Stile, which makes his Paraphrase somewhat difficult

#### The PREFACE.

difficult, and of less general Use; and besides, it was never printed by it self without his large Notes. The Right Reverend Father in God Dr. Patrick Lord Bishop of Ely, has with admirable Learning and Judiciousness brought this way of Writing to Perfection, in his Paraphrase upon some Books of the Old Testament; And all who desire to understand the Scriptures fully, will ever wish that his Lordship had gone through the whole Writings both of the Old and New Testament in the same Way. Others who have written good Expositions upon the Holy Scriptures, have either made large Commentaries, of less general and constant Use; or have insisted chiefly on such Critical Ob-

servations, as are proper only for the Learned.

I have endeavoured in these Papers to express the full Sense of the Evangelist in the plainest Words, and to continue the Sense without interruption by the clearest Transitions I could. I have all along consulted the best Expositors, and selected out of every one what seemed to discover the most natural Meaning of the Text. And where any thing remarkable offered it self to my Thoughts, different from what I met with in Commentators; I fet it down in short Notes in the Margin. But other Critical Observations I have generally omitted, (excepting what use is made of them in the Paraphrase,) that I might not fivell the Marginal Notes into a Commentary, and trouble the Reader with repeating what others had said already. Through the whole I have sincerely endeavoured to reprefent the Doctrine of our Saviour in its Original Simplicity, without respect to any Controversies in Religion; and where soever I may have mistaken the Sense of the Evangelist, I shall be always desirous to be better informed.



## THE

# CONTENTS

Of the GOSPEL according to St MATTHEW.

11

A

0

d

5,

it

al

at

ot

le

ly.

e-

li-

nd

n-

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

#### CHAP. I.

CHrist's Genealogy, ver. 1. The History of Christ's Conception and Birth, ver. 18.

#### CHAP. II.

The History of the Magi, or Wise Men, coming to worship Christ; And of Herod's Cruelty and Death.

#### CHAP. III.

John the Baptist's Life and Office, ver. 1. The Baptism of Christ, ver. 13.

#### CHAP. IV.

Christ's Fasting and Temptation, ver. 1. His beginning to preach, ver. 12. His choosing Apostles, ver. 18.

#### CHAP. V.

Christ's Sermon on the Mount, beginning with the Beatitudes, ver. 1. Christ's Disciples to be Examples to the World, ver. 13. The Gospel fulfils and improves the Law, ver. 17. In the Case of Murder and Anger, ver. 21. In the Case of Adultery, ver. 27. In the Case of Divorces, ver. 31. In the Case of Swearing, ver. 33. In the Case of Revenge, ver. 38. Of loving our Enemies, ver. 43.

A 4 CHAP.

#### CHAP. VI.

Of Alms, ver. 1. Of Prayer, ver. 5. Of Fasting, ver. 16. Of the Opposition between this World and the next, ver. 19.

#### CHAP. VII.

Of Censoriousness andrash Judgment, ver. 1. Of importunate Prayer, ver. 7. Of Equity, ver. 12. Of the difficulty of a Religious Life, ver. 13. Of false Teachers, ver. 15. Of the Necessity of Obedience, ver. 21. The Conclusion of Christ's Sermon, ver. 28.

#### CHAP. VIII.

A Leprous Person healed, ver. 1. A Centurion's Servant healed, ver. 5. Peter's Mother-in-law healed, ver. 14. The Poverty of Christ, ver. 18. Of Perseverance, ver. 21. A Tempest miraculously stilled, ver. 23. Devils cast out of a Man, and entring into Swine, ver. 28.

#### CHAP. IX.

A Palsie cured; and Christ's Power of remitting Sins, occasionally afferted, ver. 1. The Calling of Matthew, and Christ's eating with Publicans and Sinners, ver. 9. The Disciples not fasting, defended, ver. 14. A Woman raised from the dead, and a Bloody-flux cured, ver. 18. Two blind Men cured, ver. 27. A dumb Man cured, ver. 32. The want of good Ministers, ver. 35.

#### CHAP. X.

Christ's Instruction to his Apostles, at their being sent out to preach, ver. 1. The Blessing of those who receive them, ver. 40.

#### CHAP. XI.

Christ's Answer to John the Baptist's Question, who he was, ver. 1. Christ's Testimony of John the Baptist, ver. 7. The Jews Perverseness in judging of John and Christ, ver. 16. Christ's upbraiding the Jewish Cities for their Impenitence, ver. 20. The Wisdom of God in revealing the Gospel to the Simple, ver. 25. Christ's Invitation of Sinners to embrace the Gospel, ver. 27.

#### CHAP. XII.

The Disciples plucking and eating Corn on the Sabbath-day, vindicated, ver. 1. A withered Hand healed, ver. 9. A blind and dumb Man healed, ver. 22. Blasphemy against the Ho-

ly Ghost, ver. 31. Hypocrisie of the Pharisees, ver. 33. Their unreasonableness in asking a sign from Heaven, ver. 38. Obedience the chief thing respected by Christ, ver. 46.

#### CHAP. XIII.

e

f

f

1-

be

I.

a

fi-

nd

be

7772

nd

be

ch,

ass

7. er.

ni-

pel

712-

rdi-

ind Ho-

ly

Parable of the Sower, ver. 1. Why Christ spake in Parables, ver. 10. Parable of the Tares, ver. 24. Of the Mustard-Seed, ver. 31. Of the Leaven, ver. 33. The Explication of these Parables, ver. 19 and 34. Parable of the hidden Treasure, ver. 44. Of the Pearl, ver. 45. Of the Fishing-Net, ver. 47. The Use and Application of them to the Disciples, ver. 51. Christ despised in his own Country, ver. 53.

#### CHAP. XIV.

Herod's Opinion of Christ; and the History of John Baptist's Death, ver. 1. Five thousand Men sed with sive Loaves and two Fishes, ver. 13. Christ and Peter's walking upon the Sea, ver. 22. Many Sick healed at Gennesaret, ver. 34,

#### CHAP. XV.

The Pharisees Hypocrify and vain Traditions reproved, and the true Notion of Cleanness stated, ver. 1. The Woman of Canaan's Daughter healed, ver. 21. Many others cured in Galilee, and four thousand fed with seven Loaves and a few Fishes, ver. 29.

#### CHAP. XVI.

The Pharifees ask a Sign from Heaven, and are denied, ver.

1. The Disciples warned to take heed of the Leaven of the Pharifees and Sadducees, ver. 5. The Peoples Opinion of Christ, and Peter's Confession of him, ver. 13. Jesus fore-tells his Death, and rebukes Peter for speaking against it, ver. 21. The necessity of bearing Afflictions and Persecutions, ver. 24.

#### CHAP. XVII.

Christ's Transsiguration, ver. 1. That John the Baptist was Elias, ver. 10. A Lunatick healed, and the Disciples rebuked for want of Faith, v. 14. Christ foretelleth bis Death and Resurrection, ver. 22. Christ payeth Tribute, ver. 24.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. XVIII.

Innocence and Humility requisite to the making good Christians, ver. 1. Of Scandal, and of Christian Reproof, ver. 6, and 15. Of forgiving the Penitent, and the necessity of showing Mercy to others, that we our selves may obtain it of God, ver. 21.

#### CHAP. XIX.

Of Divorces, ver. 1. Of Marriage, ver. 10. Christ receiveth and blesseth young Children, ver. 13. Instructeth a young Man about Religious Perfection, ver. 16. The great Temptation of Riches, ver. 23. The Reward of those who lose all for Christ's Sake, ver. 27.

#### CHAP. XX.

The Parable of the Labourers hired into the Vineyard, ver. 1. Jesus again foretelleth his Passion, ver. 17. Upon occasion of Salome's Petition, he teacheth his Disciples Humility, ver. 20. Two blind Men healed, ver. 29.

#### CHAP. XXI.

Christ rideth into Jerusalem, ver. 1. Driveth the Traders out of the Temple, ver. 12. Children make Acclamations to Jesus, ver. 14. Jesus curseth the Fig-tree, ver. 18. Silenceth the Jews with a Question about John Baptist's Authority, ver. 23. Shows by the Similitude of two Sons, that the Jews were worse than the Gentiles, ver. 28. The Parable of the Vineyard let out to Husbandmen, ver. 33. The Pharisees Indignation at it, ver. 45.

#### CHAP. XXII.

The Parable of the Marriage of the King's Son, ver. 1. The Calling of the Gentiles, ver. 9. The Punishment of wicked Christians, ver. 12. Of paying Tribute to Cæsar, ver. 15. The Sadducees confuted, and the Resurrection proved, ver. 23. Which is the greatest Commandment, ver. 34. The Pharisees silenced with a Question about Christ's being David's Son, ver. 41.

#### CHAP. XXIII.

Christ openly reproveth the Hypocrisie, and vain Traditions, and false Doctrines of the Pharisees, ver. 1. Lamenteth over Jerusalem, and foretelleth its Destruction, ver. 37.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. XXIV.

Christ foretells the Destruction of Jerusalem, and the End of the World, and warns all Men to watch.

#### CHAP. XXV.

of

e-a

at

bo

I.

ion

er.

lers

ions

18. 4u-

ons

28.

ver.

The

ick-

ver. ved, 34. peing

ons, teth

P.

The Parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins, ver. 1. The Parable of the Talents, ver. 14. A Description of the last Judgment, ver. 31.

#### CHAP. XXVI.

The Jews Conspiracy against Christ, ver. 1. Christ's Feet anointed, ver. 6. Judas bribed to betray Christ, ver. 14.
Christ's Passover Supper, ver. 17. The Institution of the
Lord's Supper, ver. 26. Christ foretells his Disciples Flight,
and Peter's Denial, ver. 31. Christ's Prayer and Passon,
ver. 36. Christ betrayed by Judas, and apprehended, ver.
47. Christ's Trial before Caiaphas, ver. 57. Peter's Denial, ver. 69.

#### CHAP. XXVII.

Christ carried before Pilate, v. 1. Judas's Death, v. 3. Christ's Tryal before Pilate, ver. 11. Pilate indeavours to release him, but cannot, ver. 15. Christ mocked by the Soldiers, and Crucified, ver. 27. The three Hours Darkness, ver. 45. Christ's Death, and the following Signs, ver. 50. His Burial, ver. 57. His Sepulchre watched, ver. 62.

#### CHAP. XXVIII.

Christ's Resurrection, ver. 1. His Appearance to Mary Magdalene, ver. 8. The Report of his Body being stolen, ver. 11. Christ's Appearance and last Instructions to his Disciples, ver. 16.





A

## PARAPHRASE

ONTHE

# Gospel of St Matthew.

#### CHAP. I.

Christ's Genealogy, ver. 1. The History of Christ's Conception and Birth, ver. 18.

Birth, was (according to the Prophelies that went before concerning him,) from Abraham, to whom God had expresly promised, that in his Seed should all the Nations of the Earth be blessed; and from David, of whose Family the Messiah was by the whole Jewish Nation without Controversie expected to arise.

2. And his Genealogy from Abraham, down to his reputed Father Jofeph is this.

- 1. Abraham.
- 2. Ifaac.
- 3. Jacob.
- 1 4. Judas.

the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

3 And

- 3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Efrom, and Efrom begat Aram.
- 4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begit Salmon.
- 5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.
- 6 And Jeffe begat David the king, and David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias.

ion

of

era-

ift,

id,

m.

egat

be-

Ja-

and

And

- 7 And Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Afa.
- 8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.
- 9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.
- o And Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

- 5. Phares.
  - 6. Efrom.
  - 7. Aram.
  - 8. Aminadab.
  - 9. Naasson.
  - 19. Salmon.
  - 11. Booz.
  - 12. Obed.
  - 13. Jesse.
  - 14. David.
  - 1. Solomon.
  - 2. Roboam.
  - 3. Abia.
  - 4. Afa.
  - 5. Josaphat.
  - 6. Jorain.
  - 7. Ozias.
  - 8. Joatham.
  - 9. Achaz.
  - 10. Ezekias.
  - 11. Manasses.
  - 12. Amon.
  - 13. Josias.

- 14. Jechonias, or Jehoiakim; about the time of the Captivity.
- 1. Jechonias, or Jehoiachin, 2 Kings 24. 6.
- 2. Salathiel.
- 3. Zorobabel.
- 4. Abiud.
- 5. Eliakim.
- 6. Azor.
- 7. Sadoc.
- 8. Achim.
- 9. Eliud.
- 10. Eleazar.
- 11. Matthan.
- 12. Jacob.
- 13. Joseph.
- 14. Jesus.

17. Thus from Abraham to David, are reckoned fourteen Generations; likewise from David to the Babylonish Captivity, fourteen Generations; and from thence again to Christ, fourteen Generations.

18. ¶ Now the Birth of Christ was not after the manner of the rest of Mankind, in the ordinary and natural

gat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Iacob.

16 And Jacobbegat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jefus who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from A-braham to David, are fourteen generations: and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Chrift, are fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the birthof Jesus Christ

was

be-

out

rere

to

hey

to

nias

and

Zo-

ba-

and

Ilia-

cim

be-

Sa-

im,

egat

be-

Ele-

han,

egat

bbe-

hus-

n le-

alled

ge-

A-

avid,

nera-

Da-

arry-

laby-

n ge-

rom

way

unto

rteen

the

Christ

was

of

was on this wife: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lordappeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, sear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

bring forth a fon, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins.

22 (Now all this was done that it might be fulfilled which was fpoken of the Lord by the prophet, faying,

23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shallbring fortha son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, (which being interpreted, is, God with us)

Way. But when his Mother Mary was contracted to Joseph, before they came together, the was found to be with Child by the extraordinary and miraculous Operation of the Holy Ghost.

Child without his Knowledge, was much troubled and disturbed at it, being yet wholly ignorant of the Divine Mystery. Nevertheless, being a good and \* compassionate Man, he was \* So the unwilling to expose her to publick word present in the old privately.

Testament

19. Foseph perceiving her to be with

privately.

Mind upon these Things, an Angel ap-thence of peared to him in a Dream, and said; rais in Joseph, do not entertain any evil the LXX. Thoughts concerning Mary your Wise; and in the for she is not only innocent of what you New Test.

wrongfully fuspect her, but is also chosen of God to be the Instrument of a great and miraculous Work; for the Child that is now conceived in her, is by the wonderful and immediate

Power of the Holy Ghost.

21. And she shall be delivered of a Son; and his Name shall be called fesus, that is, The Saviour: For he shall be that long-expected Messiah, who by giving himself a Sacrifice for all past Sins, and by publishing for the surve the gracious Terms of Faith and Repentance, shall deliver his People from the dominion and punishment of Sin, and bring them to everlasting Life.

22. And hereby thall be most eminently fulfilled that remarkable Prophecy of *Isaiah*, (*Isa.* 7. 14.)

23. Behold; a Virgin shall conceive and bring forth a Son, and he shall be called Immanuel, that is, God with us.

24. When

24. When the Angel had thus faid, foseph awaked; and being fully satisfied of his Wise's Innocence and Virtue, he obeys the Command of God delivered by the Angel, and receives her chearfully.

25. Yet, looking upon her to be hereby confecrated to God, he continues to abstain from her. And she brought forth her only Son, and called

his name Jesus.

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name

lefus.

## CHAP. II.

The History of the Magi, or Wise Men, coming to worship Christ; And of Herod's Cruelty and Death.

1. Jefus being thus born in Bethlehem of Judæa, in the Reign of King Herod; it was not long, before his coming into the World was made known, not only to those devouter Jews, who waited for the appearing of the Messias and the Redemption of Israel, but even to the Gentiles also. For at this time, certain Astronomers, or Philosophers, came from the Eastern part of the World, as far as to Jerusalem.

2. And there they made enquiry, faying, Where is the great King that is born in Judea? For when we were afar off in our own Country, we faw a new Star; from the appearance of which, we affuredly collected that That great Prince, whom the World both from Traditions and Prophesies expects

Jefus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wife men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? for we have feen his flar in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When

eph

om

an-

had

and

his

her

had

her

and

ame

rift;

when

was

ehem

edays

cing,

came

n the

Where

born

ews?

en his

; and

orship

n,

When Herod had the king heard thefe things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he gathered all had priests chief the and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they faid unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by

the prophet; 6 And thou Bethlehem in the land of luda, are not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour that shall rule my people Ifrael.

Then Herod, when he had pricalled wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

### St. MATTHEW.

about this time, is now born; and this Star directed us to Judæa to feek for him, and we are come to pay him

Homage.

2. Upon this Enquiry made by the wife Men; King Herod, who was a Foreigner, and had been cruel and arbitrary; and feared that he should lose his Kingdom, if that great Prince, of whom he knew the Nation had a general Expectation, were now born; was extreamly troubled and diffurbed. all Ferusalem likewise, was greatly moved at the strangeness of the Enquiry.

4. But Herod to fatisfy himself more fully, calls for the Chief Priests and Teachers of the People, and enquires of them, Where the Messiah, whom

they expected, was to be born.

5. They told him, in Bethlehem a Town of Judga; For so the Prophet Micab had foretold, in these Words,

(Mic. 5. 2.)

6. And thou Bethlehem in the Land of Juda, though thou beeft but a small City, yet art thou by no means the least honourable among the Principalities of Juda; for out of thee shall arise a Governour, that shall rule my people Ifrael.

7. Herod at this Answer being now more confirmed in his Sufpicion, that the Child Fefus was deligned to be Prince and King of the Fews, resolved (if possible) to prevent it by destroying him; and that this his wicked Delign might not miscarry by being discover'd too foon, he contrives Means to conceal the cruel purpose under the pretense of Piety. Calling therefore the wife Men fecretly to him, he enquires

When

quires of them the exact time of the Star's appearing:

- 8. And fends them to Betblehem, faying, go fearch carefully for the Young Child; and when you have found him, come and bring me word; that I my felf also may go and do Obeisance to him.
- 9. The Wise Men, not suspecting the King's wicked Intentions, went accordingly to seek for the Child: And as soon as they were out of the City, the Star, which they had at first seen in the East, appeared to them again, and conducted them to the Place where the Child Jesus was.
- 10. This appearing of the Star to them again, affured them of the continuance of the Divine Affiftance and Direction, and filled their Hearts with exceeding great Joy.
- vhich the Star had guided them, they found the Child with his Mother Mary; and they fell down and worshipped him, and presented him with the choicest Products of their Eastern Country; with Gold, Frankincense, and Myrrhe.
- prepared to return again unto *Herod*; but God, to prevent the cruel Defigns of the King, commanded them in a Dream not to go back to him, but to return Home to their own Country by another Way.

- 8 And he fent them to Bethlehem, and faid, Go, and fearch diligently for the young child, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.
- 9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.
- 10 When they faw the star, they rejoyced with exceeding greatjoy.
- II ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother; and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.
- warned of God in a dream, that they fhould not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

13 And

## Chap. II.

I.

ent

em,

and

for

and

und

ord

may

fhip

had

they

, the

faw

t be-

ill it

over

oung

they

they

ex-

when

einto

y faw

with

other;

and

him:

ey had

resent-

gifts;

ankin-

rrhe.

being

God in

at they turn to departr own

trea-

oy.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, faying, Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will feek the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And wasthere until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was fpoken of the Lord by the prophet, faying, Out of Egypt have I called my fon.

16 Then Herod, when he faw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and fent forth, and flew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wisemen.

13. The wife Men being thus fent Home, and Herod disappointed of his expected Information; an Angel appeared to Joseph in a Dream, to acquaint him with Herod's Design of killing the Child, and to command him to flee with the Child and his Mother into Egypt, and to abide there till he should have notice given him when he might fafely return.

14. Foliph, upon this Warning, flees into Egypt by Night, with Mary and the Child;

15. And there he continued till the death of Herod. Whereby were remarkably accomplished those Words of the Prophet Hosea, which, under the Type of the Children of Israel, had their principal respect to Christ; Out of Egypt have I called my Son, (Hof. 11.

16. In the mean time Herod finding that the wife Men had deceived him, and were gone Home, fell into a great Rage; and to make fure that the Child should not escape him, he commanded all the Children under two Years old, that were in Betblehem and the neighbouring Villages, to be flain; having gathered from his Conference with the wife Men, that Jesus could not yet be arrived at that Age.

nother

17. Then were accomplished these Words of the Prophet *Jeremy*; (*Jer.* 31. 15.)

- 18. In Ramah was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping and great mourning; Rachael weeping for her Children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.
- 19. Not long after this, Herod died: And then the Angel which had commanded Joseph to flee into Egypt, appeared to him again in a Dream there.
- 20. And commanded him to return with the Child and his Mother into the Land of *Ifrael*; for that *Herod*, who had defigned to kill the Child, was now dead himself.
- 21. Accordingly *Joseph*, in Obedience to the Divine Command, returned with the Child and his Mother into the Land of *Ifrael*.
- 22. Nevertheless, hearing Archelaus succeeded his Father Herod in the Kingdom of Judæa, and fearing lest this new Prince should imitate his Father's Cruelty; he durst not venture to dwell in Judæa, but by the divine Direction retired into Galilee.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, say-

ing,
18 In Rama was
there a voice
heard, lamentation and weeping,
and great mourning, Rachaelweeping for her children, and would
not be comforted,
because they are not.

Herodwasdead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in

Egypt,

20 Saying, Arife, and take the young childandhismother, and go into the land of Ifrael: for they are dead which fought the young childslife.

21 And he arofe, and took the young child and his mother, and came into theland of Ifrael.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his Father Hehe was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And

## Chap. III.

il-

ny

y-

ras

ice

ati-

ng,

rnep-

hil-

ted, not. hen be-

the in a h in

rife,

ther,

land

they

hich

oung

rofe,

oung

mo-

into

en he

rche-

n in

room

r He-

as a-

thi-

with-

being

od in

turned arts of

3 And

iel.

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

## St. MATTHEW.

23. And there he dwelt in the City Nazareth. From whence Jesus was called a Nazarite: As the Prophets had foretold that he should be, in several Senses of that Word: And particularly, as it was prophesied in those words, Judg. 13. 5. which were spoken of Sampson as a Type of Christ; He \* shall be a Nazarite from the Womb.

## CHAP. III.

John the Baptist's Life and Office, v. 1. The Baptism of Christ, ver. 13.

I N those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

2 And faying, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 1. THUS Jesus dwelt privately with his Parents, till the time drew near that he was to begin his publick Ministry: About which time, his Forerunner John the Baptist, began to preach in the Wilderness of Judwa.

2. And the Subject of John's Preaching to the People, was that they should repent, and reform their Lives; because now the Kingdom of the Messias and the Christian Religion was about to be established; wherein all ceremonial Performances being to cease, nothing but true Repentance and sincere Obedience was required and would be accepted by God to eternal Life.

3 For this is he that was fpoken of

3. This John the Baptist was that Fore-runner of Christ, of who n Esaias B 3 pro-

<sup>\*</sup> This place, though scarce taken notice of by Commentators, seems to be more immediately respected by the Evangelist, than those where only the word "I" is used in different Senses.

prophesied, that in like manner as powerful Princes use to have the Ways cleared and levelled before them, fo this Man was by his preaching of Repentance to prepare Mens Hearts for the reception

of the Gospel.

4. Now the manner in which this Preacher of Repentance appeared, was with all Humility, Holiness, and Austerity of Life. His Cloathing was of the most common and meanest kind of + 'Areides Garments, and his Food was of the +

some un-coarsest sort.

derstand of 5. Upon his appearing in this Form Herbs, o- and Garb of a Prophet, and Preaching thers of A- the necessity and the acceptableness of nimals, Repentance; much People, both of without a- ferusal m and of all Judaa, came out ny materito him; al diffe-

6. And they were baptized by him in the River Fordan, publickly confessing their former Sins, and professing their Resolutions of amendment of

Life.

rence of

the Sense.

- 7. ¶ Now among the rest that came thus to be baptized by John, were many of the Pharifees and Sadducees, Men of great Pride, valuing themselves on their being descended from Abrabam and the Patriarchs, and trusting in their strict observance of certain outward and ceremonial Rites of the Law. These Men John severely reproved, faying; O ye perverse and hypocritical Generation of Men; Think not that by being baptized of me, or by any other ritual or external Performance, you can escape the Wrath and Judgment of God.
- 8. But if ye will indeed escape it, repent and forfake your Sins; reform your Lives to the Obedience of God's Commands; and this do with such

by the prophet Esaias, faying, voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loyns; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

- 5 Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,
- 6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their fins.
- 7 ¶ But when he faw many of the Pharifees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, Ogeneration of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

II. Cfai-The ying ess, way e his

ame raihair, irdle and custs

and ound bapor-

their

tout

alem

en he the addus bapunto ation hath o flee th to

thereet for

And

9 And think not to fay within your felves, We have Abraham to our father: for I fay unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

10 And now also theax islaid unto the root of the tree: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with

12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he willthroughlypurge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the with unquenchable fire.

Humility and Constancy, as may prove the Truth and Sincerity of your Repentance.

9. And do not imagin that you shall escape the Wrath of God, by being the Children of Abraham; for if you imitate not his Faith and his Piery, God will cast you off, and adopt Men from among the Gentiles, or even raise Men out of the Stones of the Earth, (rather than fave you in your Wickedness;) who shall succeed in the Faith, and in the Obedience, and in the Bleffing of Abraham.

10. Nor is there any more time of delay. God is now about to offer the last Dispensation of Repentance and Mercy: And if you do not immediately repent and reform your Lives, his Vengeance hangs over you as fruitless Trees ready to be cut down, and you shall be utterly and irrecoverably destroyed.

11. And I indeed, as a Sign to oblige you to repent and prepare your felves for the Coming of the Melliah, do baptize you with Water. But when he himself shall appear, who is so far Superior to me, as that I account not my felf worthy to do the meanest Offices for him, he shall baptize you with the powerful Influence of his Holy Spirit, whose appearance shall be as Fire, Acts 2. 3.

12. And he shall throughly try the Spirits of Men, as when with a Fan one separateth the Chaff from the Corn; and those who are fincere and good, he shall preserve and reward; but those who are wicked and incorrigible, he shall condemn to utter Destruction, as the Chaff to the Fire.

(

13. ¶ Thus John instructed those that were to be baptized by him. And while he was thus baptizing, Jefus himself came down from Galike to Jordan, to be baptized of him.

14. But John, knowing him now by immediate Revelation to be the Person, † whom God by the Signal of the visible descent of the Holy Ghost would immediately discover to be the Messiah, refused to baptize him, saying, It is much more fit that you should baptize me, than I you.

15. But Jesus said to him. You shall baptize me notwithstanding. For thus God hath appointed to initiate me intomy Ministry; and thus it becomes us to give an Example of doing all things decently and with order. Then John

baptized him.

16 Jesus being thus baptized, came upout of the Water; and immediately John saw the appointed Token: The Clouds opened, and the Spirit of God descended like a Dove, and rested upon Jesus.

out of Heaven, faying, This is my beloved Son, the *Messiah* fent into the World to reveal the Will of God to Mankind; him believe ye and obey.

13 ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

14 But John forbad him, faying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jefus when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of Goddescending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

voice from heaven, faying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well

pleased.

<sup>+</sup> By this History of St Matthew, John seems to have known Christ before he baptized him; whereas in St John, Christ seems to have been first made known to him by the descent of the Holy Ghost after his Baptism. It is most probable, that God having before given John that Token to know Christ by, did upon Christ's coming to be baptized, reveal to John that this was the Person, upon whom he should presently see the Signal.

## CHAP. IV.

Christ's Fasting and Temptation, ver. 1. His beginning to Preach, ver. 12. His choosing Apostles, ver. 18.

Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil.

2 And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he faid, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

1

S

n

t

d

4 But he anfwered and faid, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and fetteth him on a pinnacle of the temple.

6 And faith unto him, If thou be

1. A Frer this, Jesus by the Conduct of the Spirit of God retired into the Wilderness, to prepare himself for his Ministry by Prayer and Fasting, and to resist and vanquish the Temptations of the Devil.

2. In this place he continued fasting for forty Days and forty Nights together, as *Moses* and *Elias*, the two great Prophets under the Law, had done;

after which he grew hungry.

3. Upon this Occasion, the Devil hoping to prevail upon him through the Infirmity of his Body, to do somewhat that might argue forme distrust in his Mind concerning the Providence of God, affaults him with his first Temptation; faying, If you are indeed the Son of God, make proof now of your Power, to your own Relief, and command that these Stones be turned into Bread.

4. But Jesus answered; "Tis not by mere Bread, (as the Scripture saith, Deut. 8. 3.) that the Life of Man is sustained, but by the Providence and the Blessing of God.

5. This Temptation failing; the Devil carries him into *Jerusalem*, and placeth him upon the Edge of the Battlements of the Temple;

6. And faith; If you be the Son of God, throw your felf down now, and try if God

10

in

ar

na

u

111

th

be

iI

7

t

0

t

God will miraculously preserve you: For if you be indeed the Son of God, you have a promise in Scripture (Psalm 91. 11.) that he shall give his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

7. But Jesus answered; Again the Scripture saith, (Deut. 6. 16.) Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. In present Dangers we are to rely upon God; but we must not wilfully throw our selves into Danger, on purpose to tempt his Power or Goodness to work a Mira-

cle to preserve us.

8. This Temptation likewise failing; the Devil resolves to make one tryal more; and carrying him up into an exceeding high Mountain, he at once made to him a representation of all the Kingdoms of the World, in their greatest Splendor and Glory;

9. And faith, All these things will I give you; you shall have all the Riches, and Honour and Pleasure, that the whole World can afford; if you will but pay me an Acknowledgment

and worship me.

nation; Depart from me, Satan; For the Scripture faith (Deut. 6. 13.) Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and

bim only shalt thou ferve.

appointed and baffled, and despairing to succeed in any other Temptations, departed from Jesus: And good Angels came and ministred unto him, rejoycing at his Victory, comforting him after his Trial, and refreshing him after his long Fast.

the Son of God, cast thy self down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy soot against a stone.

7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord

thy God.

8 Again, the deviltaketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And faith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

To Then faith Jefus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

villeaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministred unto

him.

## Chap. IV.

r

ls

r

r

y

0

n

lt

f

f

t

,

P

t

d

12 Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed

into Galilee.

13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the fea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, fay-

15 The land of Zabulon and the of Nepthalim, by the way of the fea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which fat in darkness, saw greatlight: and to them which fat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprungup.

17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to fay, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at

hand.

## St. MATTHEW.

12. After these things, Jesus hearing that John the Baptist was cast into Prison by Herod, retired into Galile.

13. And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, a City of great refort near the Lake of Tiberias, on the Borders of Zabulon and Neph-

thali.

14. Where by his gracious Prefence and Continuance among them, was remarkably fulfilled that Prophecy of Isai-

ab, (I/ai. 9. 1.)

15. The dimness shall be no more, as in the time of her vexation. as at the first he + made contemptible the Land of Zebulun, and the Land of Naphtali: So afterwards he shall make them \* glorious; even by the way of the Sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles.

16. The People which fat in Darkness, saw great Light; and to them which sat in the Region and Shadow of

Death, Light is sprung up.

17. From this time Jesus began his Ministry, preaching to the People that they should repent and reform their Lives; for that now God was about to establish the Kingdom of the Messiah, and to make his last Dispensation or Discovery of his Will to Mankind; wherein no external or ceremonial Performances, but only Faith and true Repentance, and fincerely renewed Obedience, should be accepted to the Salvation of Sinners.

<sup>+. \*.</sup> So Mr. Mede most truly renders the Words and I have added also the first Words of the Verse, which perhaps he needed not to have rejected to the foregoing Chap-

we

Syn

bro

all

W

ve

tor

w

fec

th

lu

th

an

fo

m

pl

ar

aı

fi

18. ¶ Being therefore about to enter upon his publick Preaching, he began to choose to himself certain Disciples, who should be Witnesses of his Miracles and of his Preaching while he lived, and should publish both his Works and Doctrine through the World after his death. And first, as he was walking by the Lake of Genasereth, he saw two Fishermen that were Brethren, Simon (who is also called Peter,) and Andrew, fishing in the Lake.

19. And he faid unto them; follow me, and I will teach you a more nobleand excellent Calling. From henceforth ye shall catch Men; that is, ye shall gain and convert them from Sin and Misery, to Righteousness and Hap-

pinefs.

20. Upon this Invitation, they prefently left their Nets, and followed him; being very willing to forfake their former. Employment, to be fent upon a Work that should more immediately tend to the Glory of God, and to the Good of Men.

21. A little after, he faw two other Brethren, James and John, the Sons of Zebedee, in a Boat with their Father, mending their Nets; and he called them likewise.

22. And these also, without delay, followed him; quitting the Prost of their Trade, and their dearest Relations, to be employed in so excellent and

Divine a Work.

23 With these Men Jesus travelled over all Galilee, preaching, not only privately, but also openly in all their Places of publick Worship; teaching them his true Religion; and proving the Authority and the Goodness of his Dostrine, by the beneficial Miracles of

18 ¶ And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren; Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were sisters.)

19 And he faith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they firaitway left *their* nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he faw two other brethren, James the fon of Zebedee, and John hls brother, in a ship with Zebedee their Father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediately left the fhip and their father, and followed him.

went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the gofpel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of fickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And

## Chap. V.

V.

efus

fea

wo

non

An-

ier,

the

ere

ith

ow

vill

of

hey

peir

ved

he re-

roith

Fa-

eir led

m-

the

fa-

red

fus .

ıli-

eir

nd

of-

m,

n-

nd

if-:0-

nd

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all fick people that were taken with divers difeases, and torments, and those which were possessible which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie; and he healed them.

followed him great rultitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerufalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

25 And there

## St. MATTHEW.

healing all manner of Difeases and Infirmities.

24. By this means his Fame presently spread over *Syria*: So that all sorts of diseased Persons, and Lunaticks, and Men possessed with Devils, were brought to him from all Parts; and he healed them with a Word.

25. And a great multitude of the People followed him from all Parts of the Country; from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and Judæa, and from beyond Jordan.

## CHAP. V.

Christ's Sermon on the Mount, beginning with the Beatitudes, ver. 1. Christ's Disciples to be Examples to the World, ver. 13. The Gospel fulfils and improves the Law, ver. 17. In the Case of Murder and Anger, ver. 21. In the Case of Adultery and Lust, ver. 27. In the Case of Divorces, ver. 31. In the Case of Swearing, ver. 33. In the Case of Revenge, v. 38. Of loving our Enemies, ver. 43.

A ND feeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was fet, his disciples cameuntohim, I. JESUS being pressed with the great multitude of People, retired from them to the top of a Hill; and when he was sat down, his Disciples, and † as many as, were desirous to hear +Luk.vii.1. his Doctrine, drew near and stood about him.

2. And

Chap. V.

me tha

pu th

th

te

fa

tl

V

y re P

3 Bleffed are the poor in fpirit: for theirsisthekingdom of heaven.

ang;
3. Blessed are those that are poor and humble, modest and contented; who set not their Hearts upon this present World, nor too eagerly seek the Riches and Splendour of it; who preser Righteousness before Wealth and Honour, and can readily despise and contentedly part with these Things for the sake of Religion: Blessed, I say, are

these Men; for they are fitly prepared to be Members of the true Church of God here, and shall be rewarded with

eternal Happiness hereafter.

4. Blessed are those who live not in Voluptuousness, but seriously lament the Sins and Follies, and patiently endure the Hardships and Afflictions of this present Lise: For they shall be comforted with the present Peace and Joy of the Holy Ghost, and with the Happiness of the Worldto come.

5. Blessed are those, who are of a meek and gentle, a quiet and harmless Spirit; free from Passion and Violence, from Haughtiness and Turbulency: For such Men shall generally be secured in the quiet possession of their Rights in this World, by the peculiar Providence of God; or however, shall have an Inheritance in that new Earth, (2 Pet. 3. 13.) wherein Peace and Righteousness are for ever to dwell.

6. Bleffed are those who earnestly desire to become truly Virtuous and Religious: For the Grace of God will never fail to direct such Men in the right way, and to affish them with sufficient means, to attain the Fruition of true Virtue, both in the Satisfaction of the present Practice of it, and in the sulness of its future Reward.

4 Bleffed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5 Bleffed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Bleffed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

7 Bleffed

Chap. V.

7 Bleffed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

8 Bleffed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Bleffed are they which are perfecuted for righteouinels fake: for theirs is the kingdom of hea-

Bleffed are ye when men shall revile you, and periecute you,

## St. MATTHEW.

7. Bleffed are those who are merciful and compassionate, ready to relieve the Necessities of those that want, and to forgive the Faults of those who have offended them: For to fuch Men God will be proportionably compassionate, in the more ready forgiveness of their Sins, and in bestowing on them the greater abundance of his Mercy.

8. Bleffed are those who are truly pure and holy, free from Hypocrifie, and Uncleanness; from all Filthiness both of Flesh and Spirit: For to such Men, God will make greater and clearer Manifestations of himself in this Life; and in that which is to come, they shall have a nearer and more immediate Access to his Presence and Glory.

9. Bleffed are those, who make it their Buliness to promote the Peace and Welfare of Mankind; to do to all Men all the Good they can, at all times; and to indeavour to fettle the World in universal Quiet and Love: For these Men, being made like to God in the imitation of his most Excellent Attributes, his Goodness and Love; shall be owned and received by him as his peculiar Children, and shall be made like him also in the participation of his Happineis.

10. Lastly, Blessed are those, who undauntedly fuffer for the fake of Virtue and true Religion: For these Men, having given the greatest possible proof of their Sincerity and Constancy, shall receive an extraordinary Crown, and a particular degree of Reward in Heaven.

11. When therefore Men shall revile and reproach and persecute you, and fay all manner of evil things of you

and

ing, the for lom

ned

hey for om-

the hey the

hey iger gh hey

fled

falfely, and do all manner of Injuries to you unjustly, only for the sake of Virtue and the profession of the Truth; then esteem your selves doubly henry.

happy.

12. Then rejoyce, triumph, and leap for Joy; for exceeding great shall be your Reward in Heaven. For thus in old Time were the Prophets and the best of Men persecuted; with whom if ye patiently indure Sufferings, ye shall also partake of their extraordinary Reward.

13. ¶ Be courageous therefore, and constant, and patient. Ye are to be Teachers and Examples to the World. If by your found Doctrine and unblameable Lives, ye propagate true Religion and Virtue, ye shall preserve the World from Corruption: But if ye, who are to be the Instruments of reforming Mankind, shall your selves degenerate into Sostness and Vice; wherewithal shall ye be corrected and amended? Ye will become the most useless, and incurable, and contemptible of Men.

14. Ye are to be fet up as a Light in the World; to lead Men by your Doctrine from Error to Truth; and to convert them by your Example from Wickedness to Virtue. Ye are to be the Standard of true Religion, set up in the Sight of all Men, like a City built upon a Hill.

15. As therefore a City upon a Hill, cannot be hid from the Sight of those that pass by: And as a Candle useth not to be put under a Bushel, but to be set in a Candlestick to give Light to

the whole House:

16. Even so ought ye to be careful to make the Example of your good Lives

shall fay all manner of evil against you falsly for my sake.

12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for fo perfecuted they the prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Ye are the falt of the earth: but if the falt have lost his favour, wherewith shall it be falted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden under foot of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is fet on an hill cannot be hid.

1

1

tti

15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light fo fhine before men, V.

ner

UO

and

ad:

re-

for

hev

ich

the

but

loft ere-

falt-

orth

ing,

out,

un-

the

orld.

t on

hid.

do ndle,

er a

on a

d it

to all

oufe.

light

etore men, men, that they may fee yourgoodworks, and glorifie your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

18 For verily I fay unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but who-soever shall do, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

20 For I fay unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes

## St. MATTHEW.

bright and confpicuous before Men; that they being thereby convinced of the excellency of your Doctrine, may be converted to the Belief of true Religion, and to the Practice of true Virtue, and so give Glory to God.

I give you these new Precepts, that therefore I am come to destroy or abrogate the Law and the Prophets. No: I am not come to dissolve any one natural or moral Obligation; but on the contrary, to fulfil what was typisted, to explain what was obscure, and to compleat what was imperfect.

18. For affuredly there shall not be any part of the typical or ceremonial Law, but shall truly be suffilled: Nor any one Precept of the natural or moral Law, but shall continue in its sull force and obligation so long as the World endures.

19. Whosoever therefore shall break any one of the least of these moral Precepts, not ignorantly or by surprize, but wilfully and presumptuously, so as to persist deliberately in the Breach of it, and to teach or incourage others to do so likewise; he can be no good Christian, nor shall have any Place in the Kingdom of Heaven. But on the contrary, he that practises all these moral Precepts, and teaches others the necessity of doing the same; such a one is the best Christian, and shall be sure of the greatest Reward.

20. So that unless your Righteousness be more universal and more sincere than that of the Jewish Doctors, Scribes and Pharisees, who frequently preferred outward Ceremonies before moral Du-

C ties,

ties; ye cannot be good Christians, nor enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

21. Thus the Christian Religion is not defigned to abolish the Moral Law, but to perfect and exalt it in ma-As for Example: The ny Instances. Law forbad Murder, under the \* pain of Death.

\* Exod. 21. 12. Lev. 24.17.

22. But I say unto you, Whosoever shall so much as indulge rash and causeless Anger or Passion; shall be liable to be punished by God in another Life, with a Punishment proportionable to the feverity of that capital one inflicted by the Fews on Murderers. But he that shall suffer his Passion to rise higher, and use himself to mock and deride others; shall be further punished by God with a feverity proportionable to the greater Punishments which used to be inflicted by the higher Councel of the Fews upon the boldest Offenders. he that shall yet farther indulge his Paffion, and accustom himself to rail, slander, and revile others; shall be punished by God with the feverest of all the Degrees of Punishment, answering to that extraordinary one amongst Men, of being burnt alive.

23. If therefore, when you are about to pay any Act of Worship to God, you remember that there is any Offence or Difference between you and another; which may thus provoke God's Anger

against you:

24. Go immediately, and be first reconciled to your Adversary, and then

come and worship God.

25. Above all things, be fure to put a timely End to all Contentions that may arise; before things come to extremity, and it prove too late.

and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Ye have 2 I that it was heard, faid by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whofoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judg-

ment.

22 But I fay unto you, That who foever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whofoever shall fay to his brother, Raca, shallbe in danger of the councel: but whofoever fhall fay, Thoufool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee;

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and gothyway, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy

gift.

25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with re

er of

ve

as

ld

ot

er

in

g-

to

e-

nis a

m-

nt:

nall

er,

ın-

el:

nall

nall

nell

, if

gift

iere

thy

ght

nere

the

vay,

d to

then

thy

with fary thou with nim.

## St. MATTHEW.

him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily, I fay unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was faid by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I fay unto you, That who foever looketh on a woman to luft after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

29 And if thy righteyeoffend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is prostable for thee that one of thy members should

26. For as when one is going before the Magistrate with his Adversary, he may easily agree with him in the Way, and put an end to the Difference; but when once Sentence is past, and he is put in Prison, there is no more hope: So while Godgraciously affords you time and space, you may easily put an end to all unchristian Contentions; but if you be slow and delay till Judgment overtake you, the Time will be past, and there will remain nothing but end less Punishment.

27. ¶ Again, the Law faith, Thou shalt not commit Adultery.

28. But I fay unto you, Whosoever looketh on a Woman with unchaste Defires and Intentions, is guilty of Adultery in his own Mind, and in the Judgment of God, though he has not opportunity to commit the Fact.

29 & 30. Perhaps these more strict and exalted Precepts may seem very difficult to be practised, like plucking out a right Eye, or cutting off a right Hand. But if any thing as dear to you as your right Hand or right Eye, be a cause of making you to sin; it is much better to resolve to part with it, and to suffer the present inconvenience, how great soever it be; than to let it be the cause of your eternal ruin.

C 2 31. ¶ A-

31. ¶ Again, the Law permitted a Man in several Cases to give his Wife a Bill of Divorcement, and to put her

away.

32. But I say unto you, This was not according to the Original Design of God, but only permitted to the fews because of the hardness of their Hearts, and to prevent greater Evils. From henceforth therefore whosoever shall put away his Wife, and marry another, excepting only for the cause of Adultery, shall be accounted guilty of causing both her that is put away, and him that shall afterwards marry her, to commit Adultery.

33. ¶ Again, The Law required that Men should not for swear themselves, but religiously perform whatever they had

obliged them felves to by Oath.

34. But I fay unto you, \* Swear not at all in common Conversation. Invoke not the Name of God upon light Occafions; but let your Conversation be always so fincere and true, that your Affirmation may be received as an Oath. And do not think that mincing an Oath, or swearing by any other thing, will excuse you from the guilt of this Sin. For swearing by any of the Creatures, is in effect swearing by him that made them. Swear not therefore by Heaven; for this is swearing by the Throne of God, and consequently by God himself.

35. Neither may you fwear by the Earth; for this is fwearing by the Foot-flool of God, and confequently by God himself. Neither may you swear by Ferusalem; for this is swearing by

perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31 It hath been faid, Whofoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.

32 But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been faid by them of old time, Thou shalt not forfwear thy felf, but shall perform unto the Lordthine oaths.

34 But I fay unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for

<sup>\* &#</sup>x27;Tis evident our Saviour does not here forbid Swearing folemnly to any Truth before a Magistrate, &c.

11

0

e-

y

or

a-

O

7:

all

li-

th

ye

it

by

ne,

or-

ut

ito

hs.

nto

at

ea-

d's

the

his

ther

for

g fo-

it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

37 But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatfoever is more then these, cometh of evil.

38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been faid, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I fay unto you, that ye refift not evil: but whofoever shall simite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the otheralso.

40 And if any man will fue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also.

41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

42 Give to him that asketh thee,

the City and Temple of God, and confequently by God himfelf.

36. Neither may you fwear by any other less Sacred Thing whatsoever; for every such Thing is the Creature of God, and you have not any power over

37. But let your whole Conversation be only bare Affirmations or Denials. For whatever Expressions are more than such, do proceed from some evil Cause.

38. ¶ Again, the Law allowed retaliation of Evil; and that Injury should be returned for Injury, and Loss for Loss.

39. But I say unto you, return not Evil for Evil. But if any Man injure you, and you cannot be relieved by Just and Christian Authority; let him rather injure you \* still, than that you should right your selves by Revenge.

40. And if any Man, even in going to Law before just Authority, will be Contentious, and extort from you your Due; suffer him in small Matters to go away with it, and † rather yield him even more, than continue in Contention with him.

41. And if a Man will compel you to do an unreasonable thing, such as he has no right to demand; be content to do it, and even more than he demands, rather than return him Violence for his Violence.

42. In all things endeavour to relieve the Necessities, and to contribute to the Peace and satisfaction of all Men. To

\* Christ does not here forbid to resist Robbers and Murderers, but is to be understood of smaller Oppressions.

+ So Justin Martyr reads the Words somewhat more emphatically; Αφες ἀυτῶ Ἡ κὰ το ἰμιάτιον.

C 3 1

him that begs any thing of you, give freely; and to him that defires to borrow, be not unwilling to lend.

43. ¶ Lastly, The Law commands Men to love their Neighbours, but permits

them to hate their Enemies.

44. But I say unto you; Love not only those who love you, but even those also who are your greatest Enemies; Speak well, not only of those who speak well of you, but even of those also who Revile and Curfe you; be kind, not only to those who are kind to you, but even to those also who Hate and Reproach you; and pray, not only for those who are friendly to you, but even for those also who Injure and Persecute you.

45. Raise your Virtue and Goodness, above the common rate of Men: Let it be so universal, as to come up to the Imitation of God; who bestoweth the Benefit of his Sun and Rain, upon the Unjust and Wicked, as well as upon the

Just and Good.

46. If ye love only those who love you, what extraordinary Reward does this deferve? This is not at all above the ordinary practife of Mankind: It is no more than what is generally done, even by Persons of the lowest Character.

47. And if ye be kind and friendly only to those who are the same to you, what extraordinary Matter is this? This is no more, than what the worst of Men think themselves bound to do

in common Gratitude.

48. But let your Charity and Welldoing far exceed this common Practife of Men. Let it extend it felf univerfally in imitation of the Divine Goodness, which is the Greatest Excellency and Perfection of Gods

and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been faid, Thou shalt love thy neighbour. and hate thine ene-

44 But I fay unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curfe you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and perfecute you:

b

tl

t

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his fun to rife on the evil and on the good, and fendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the

fame?

47 And if ye falute your brethren only, what do you morethenothers? do not even the publicans fo?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father, which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP.

V.

of

ou

ve

th

alt

ur. 1e-

ito

ne-

m

do

nat

ay

de-

ou, :

ay

of

ch

he

to

nd nd

he

n=

ve

ve

rd

e-

he

a-

en

ou do

li-

re

ur in

P.

### CHAP. VI.

Of Alms, ver. 1. Of Prayer, ver. 5. Of Fasting, ver. 16. Of the Opposition between this World and the next, ver. 19.

Take heed that yedo not your alms before men, to be feen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

I. THESE are the Instances, wherein your Righteousness must exceed the Righteousness of the Fewish Doctors and Pharifees, if ye will attain to the Virtue and Reward of true Christians. There are on the other hand feveral Practifes of theirs, which, if ye will be my Disciples, ye must as carefully avoid. And first: be careful not to give your Alms openly; out of Ostentation, to be seen and commended of Men; for if ye do, this Praise of Men will be reckoned to you as your Reward, and ye shall have no Reward in the Kingdom of Hea-

- 2 Therefore when thoudoest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.
- 3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:
- 2. When therefore you do any act of Charity, be not like the hypocritical *Pharifees*, who strive to do it in the most open and publick Places, and contrive all possible ways to proclaim and publish it, that they may be admired and applauded by Men. I tell you affuredly, this shall be their only Reward, and they must expect no other from God.
- 3. But when you bestow your Alms or do any Act of Mercy, (except in such Cases where you may modestly by your good Example stir up others to the like Practise, to the greater glory of God and good of Men: Except, I say, in such Cases) chuse to do it with the greatest privacy and secrecy possible.

4. And

4. And God who fees perfectly your fecret Piety, which cannot be feen or applauded of Men, and approves the fincerity of your Heart; will at the Refurrection of the Just, when all the Actions of all Men shall be made publick, reward you openly before Men and Angels.

5. ¶ Again, When you offer up to God your private Prayers, be not like the hypocritical Pharifees, who choose to say their pretended private Prayers in the Streets and Places of common concourse, that they may be seen and applauded by Men. I tell you assuredly, this shall be their only Reward, and they must expect no other from God.

6. But when you put up your private Prayers to God, let each one retire alone into his Closet, and shut himself up; and God, who heareth your most secret Petitions, will openly rewardyour Piety and Devotion.

7. Only when you pray, do not use a multitude of Words and vain Repetitions, as is usual among the Heathens. For they pray in such a manner, as if God regarded the labour of the outward Astion, more than the inward Affection of the Mind, or could be persuaded and prevailed upon by a multiplicity of Expressions.

8. Do not therefore imitate them in this. For God, who knoweth all things, knoweth particularly all your Wants, even before you ask him.

9. But when you pray, use some such short Form as this. Almighty God, the Creator and Governour of all things, and the most bountiful Benefactor of those who Fear and Obey Thee. Grant that all reassnable Creatures, who are capable of understanding the greatness

4 That thin ealms may be in fecret: and thy Father which feet hin fecret, him felf shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayeft, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of thestreets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayeft, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathendo: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not yethereforelike unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before yeask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray et: ner et, ard

I.

ms

hen

lou

the for ray fy-the ets,

be Veou, re-

hen nter and shut y to h is

thy eeth re-

ye vain the they

shall heir nere-

em: ther what need

him. this efore pray pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name.

to Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debters.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

and glry of thy Attributes, may unfeignedly admire and adore thee; and express their Veneration and Praises of thee, in Ways most suitable to the Condition of their Nature and the Discoveries of thy Will.

10. Grant that all Mankind may come to the knowledge and belief of thy true Religion: That the Kingdom of Christ, may be extended over all the Earth; and the eternal Laws of Godliness, Righteousness, Charity, and Sobriety, be established through the whole World. Grant that all who profess this thy true Religion, may live in perfect Obedience to the Laws thereof; and that Men, as the infirmity of their Nature will permit, may obey thee with proportionable Sincerity and Constancy, as do the Spirits of the blessed in Heaven.

II. Bestow upon us every day, through the remaining part of our Lives, as many of the things of this present World, as may be sufficient for our necessary Subsistence, and for the useful and innocent Conveniences of Life.

12. Forgive us our Sins, and withhold thy Punishments which we have thereby deserved: In like manner as we freely and heartily forgive all those Injuries and Offences, which have by others been done to us.

13. Take from us the Causes and Occasions of Temptations, or else deliver us from the power of them: That we may not be moved, either with the Enticements of Riches, Honours, or Pleasure; or with the Fear of Want, Disgrace, or Pain; to do any thing knowingly contrary to thy Will. And deliver us from all the Evils and Calamities,

m

to

Fa

for

fu

W

ru

an

br

fte

yo

in

ne

ru

an

do

an

th

be

th

if

W

f

lamities, which either the Malice of the Devil, or the Wickedness or Missortunes of the World might bring upon us. These Petitions we beg of thee, O God: knowing that thou canit, and trusting in thy Mercy that thou wilt do for us more than we can desire or deserve; who art infinite in Power, Glory, and Majesty, from everlasting to everlasting. Amen.

14. After this manner ought ye to pray unto God. And in this Prayer which I have now prescribed to you, ye are more especially to observe, that I have taught you to expect and pray for Forgiveness of your Sins at the Hands of God, only in like manner as ye forgive one another your Offences and Trespasses. For if ye readily forgive one another your Trespasses, God indeed will likewise upon this Condition forgive you your Sins.

15. But if ye will not forgive one another; be affured, that neither will God be moved by any Prayers or En-

treaties to forgive you.

16. ¶ Again, when ye Fast, be not like the hypocritical Pharises, who put on sad and mournful Looks, going about in mean and fordid Garments, and with unwashed Faces, that they may appear to Men to be wonderfully Devout, and may be applauded for the strictness and severity of their Fast. I tell you affuredly this shall be their only Reward, and they must expect no other from God.

17. But when you fast, appear to Men as at other times; put on no Mournful Looks, and make no Ostentation of Strictness and Severity.

18. Make no affected show of Fasting and Sadness, but humble your selves se-

14 For if ye forgive men their trefpasses, your heavenly Father will also forgiveyou.

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither willyour Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a fad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily, I fay unto you, they have their reward.

when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and washthy face:

18 That thou appear not unto men

mentofast, but unto thy Father which is in fecret: and thy Father which feeth in fecret, shall reward thee openly.

19 Lay not up for your felves treafures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and

20 But lay up for your felves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not breakthrough and steal.

For where your treasure 15, there will your heart be also.

22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be fingle, thy whole body shall be full of light.

### St. MATTHEW.

cretly in your Devotions before God; and God, who feeth the fecret Humiliations of your Souls, will reward you openly before Men and Angels.

19. In fumm, whatever you do, regard not fo much the appearances of this present World; but in all your Actions have principally a respect to that which is to come. Be not over-folicitous to lay up a Treasure of Riches upon Earth, which a thousand Accidents may easily rob you of:

20. But be careful by good Works, proceeding from true Faith and Love, to lay up a Treasure of Rewards in Heaven, which no Power upon Earth, nor any Accident can possibly deprive you of.

21. For if your chief Defigns be to lay up a Treasure here upon Earth, your Heart and Affections will be fixed upon these things; and you will never be able to preferve that pious, refigned, and heavenly Temper of Mind, which the Christian Religion · indifpenfably requires: But if the principal Aim of your Life, be to secure a Treafure of Happiness in Heaven; then will your Heart also and Affections be fettled there.

22. Above all things therefore be fure to preserve this true Judgment of the Difference of Things; viz. That the Happiness of Heaven is the Treafure upon which your Hearts are to be fixed; and that the things of this World ought not to be too eagerly defired, but to be fought with Moderation, and used with Simplicity and Liberality. For as the Eye, is to the Direction of the fo is this True Judgment of Body; Things, to the State of the Soul. the Eye be clear and pure, the whole

-10

efnlfo

oreir ner or-

les. er, not of ce:

ure ney nto ily, hey ١.

ou, eft, ad, :

nou nto nen Body will be enlightned and well guided: In like manner, if this True Judgment of Things be kept pure and uncorrupted, the State of the Soul will be good and well ordered.

23. But as on the contrary, if the Eye be dim and cloudy, the whole Body will be in the dark and without guidance: Even so, if in this Matter your Judgment be vitiated and corrupted, the whole bent of the Soul will be erroneous and without direction: And how great is the Errour and Misery of such a State!

24. The Judgment and Affections of the Heart and Soul, cannot at once be fix'd and fettled upon things of a different and contrary Nature. No Man can at the fame time ferve two Mafters of contrary Dispositions, but he must obey the one and neglect the other. Ye cannot be truly Religious, and sincere Servants of God; while your Hearts and Affections are too intent upon the things of this present World.

wholly to two contrary things at once; let your main and principal Intentions be always fix'd upon your chief, which is your future Happiness. And after you have used a reasonable Industry to attain the Necessaries of this present Life, such as Meat and Drink, and Cloathing; \* be not any further solicitous about them; but rely upon the Providence of God for a continual

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

th

th

n

ba

tl

n

24 ¶ No man can ferve two mafters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despife the other. Ye cannot ferve God and mammon.

25 Therefore I fay unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body what ye shall put on: is not the life more than meat, and the body then raiment?

<sup>\*</sup> This Precept to the Apostles, who were to spend their Lives in travelling and propagating the Gospel, may be understood in its most strict and literal Sense: But to other Christians it must be applied in a larger Sense, as I have paraphrased it.

hine thy ll be

great

ight

e be

and

re I Take your shall shall t for

at ye s not than body

their nder-Chriphra-

ipply

26 Behold the fowls of theair: for they fow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

27 Which of you by taking thought canadd one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Confider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin.

29 And yet I fay unto you, that

Supply of them. For he that first gave you Life and Being, without your caring or giving any Assistance towards it; will much more bestow upon you things necessary for the support and prefervation of that Life.

26. Consider the other Creatures of God, which are of a lower Rank than you; the Birds, Beasts, and Plants. Consider how God, without their fore-seeing their own Wants, or being able to make any Provision for themselves, preserves and nourishes, and furnishes them with all things necessary. And will not his Providence much more provide for you?

27. But however that be, your caring and folicitude cannot be of any advantage to you. 'Tis God, that without any Care of yours, gave you Bodies; and 'tis God, that without your Knowledge, nourifhes them and causes them to increase and grow, by secret ways and imperceptible degrees. Ye cannot by any Care whatever, so much as add one Inch to the growth of your Bodies, or one Moment to your

\* Age. Rely then upon the Providence \* The of God, (who will blefs your ordinary word industry, but is displeased at your an- win signifies xious Solicitude,) to supply you with indifferent things necessary for the nourishment of ly, Stature your Body, and the preservation of your or Age.

Life.

28. And as for Clothing, why should ye be so much concerned about that? The Flowers of the Field take no Care at all for themselves, and yet God gives them a continual Increase, and clothes them with inimitable Beauty.

29. For this their Clothing is of fuch Beauty and Comeliness, as far exceeds all that the Art of Man can invent, or

the

the Cost of the greatest Princes procure; so that all the Glories even of *Solomon*'s Court, were dull and mean in comparison of these.

30. If then God thus clothes the short-lived Flowers, which are but of a few Days continuance; How unreasonable is it for you to distrust his Care and Providence, whom he hath sent into the World for so much nobler Purposes!

31. Be not therefore anxiously folicitous for the things of this present World; for Meat, and Drink, and

Clothing.

32. For upon these things do the Gentiles, who know not the Greatness of God's Power and Goodness, and the Excellency of his true Religion, employ their Thoughts. But God, who hath revealed to you far nobler things to be the Objects of your Care and Meditation, knoweth that these things are necessary for your present Subsistence, and will provide them for you.

33. Make it therefore your first and principal Business, to understand true Religion, and live according to the Precepts thereof: And all these smaller things shall be abundantly supplied to

you by the Providence of God.

34. And be not too eagerly concerned to make provision of these earthly things against the Time to come: For it is time enough to take Care for these things by a moderate Industry, as they are wanted. Sufficient to the present Time are the present Troubles of Life; and God would not have you add to them by an unreasonable solicitousness for the future.

even Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God fo clothe the grafs of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

0

fi

b

ag

h

b

b

3 I Therefore take no thought, faying, What shall we eat! or what shall we drink? or wherewithal shall we be

clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But feek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righte-ousness, and all these things shall be added

unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evilthere-of.

CHAP.

in all as not ne of

ore if

field,

s, and

aft in-

more

ye of

etake

ying,

eat?

vhere-

we be

ter all

do the

) for

y Fa-

h that of all

ek ye

om of

ighte-

llthese

added

refore

or the

or the

l take

felf:

o the

there-

P.

the

### CHAP. VII.

Of Censoriousness and rash Judgment, ver. 1. Of importunate Prayer, ver. 7. Of Equity, ver. 12. Of the difficulty of a Religious Life, ver. 13. Of False Teachers, ver. 15. Of the Necessity of Obedience, ver. 21. The Conclusion of Christ's Sermon, ver. 28.

JUdge not, that ye be not judg-

2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what meafure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine owneye?

4 Or how wilt thou fay to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thineown eye; and then shalt thou

1. B E not fevere and censorious in your Judgment upon others, that ye provoke not God to use severity towards you.

2. For in what manner ye judge, and deal with others; whether with Candour, Mercy and Charity; or with Severity and Rigour; in the fame manner will God, when he comes to Judgment, deal with you.

3. Be not therefore fo rigid in passing Judgment upon others, as the hypocritical *Pharisees* and *Jewish* Doctors are; but be more strict in the examination of your own Lives. For how exceedingly unreasonable is it, to condemn the lighter Offences of others, while you are guilty of greater Crimes your selves!

4. With what ground and confidence can you undertake to reprove others for their fmaller Sins, while ye your felves are confcious of more heinous ones? Or with what Skill can you instruct and direct others to correct and amend their Faults, while ye have not Judgment or Integrity enough to be sensible of your own?

5. Lay afide therefore this foul Hypocrify. First effectually amend and reform your own Lives: And then you may with Judgment direct, and with Authority

Authority urge and press others to Reformation.

6. And yet even in this Case there is a Discretion to be used. The wise Instructions and Admonitions of the Gospel, are not to be always cast away upon obstinate and incorrigible Men, who probably instead of being corrected and amended by them, will return you only Scoffs, Reproaches and Contents.

tempt.

7 These are the principal Instructions necessary to direct you in the progress of a Christian Life. All which that you may be able to practise, you must apply your selves to God in hearty Prayer for his Assistance. Which if you do with Faith, Constancy, and Importunity; ye shall certainly obtain whatever ye desire; at least so far, and in such manner and degree, as is needful for you.

8. For whosoever thus prays, with Faith, Earnestness, and Perseverance; God, as a merciful and tender Father, cannot deny him any thing that is ne-

ceffary for him.

9 & 10. For if even among † you who are frail and Mortal Men, tenacious, passionate, and Froward, there is no one who when his Son begs of him any thing useful or necessary for Life, can either deny to give it him, or give him any thing hurtful or useless in its stead:

11. If Men, I say, who are wicked, and peevish and ill-natured, cannot but give good things to their Children; How much more shall God, who is infinitely good and merciful, the gra-

fee clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is hely unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before fwine, left they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

7 ¶ Ask, and it shall be given you. feek, and ye shall find: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that feeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shallbe opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his fon ask bread, will give him a stone?

10 Or if heask a fish, will give him a ferpent?

ri If ye then being evil, know how to give good

cious

<sup>†</sup> The words, π'ς ἐξ ὑμῶν ἀνθρωπ, are very emphatical. to What Man? Or, who among you Men?

gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask

him? 12 Therefore all things whatfoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even fo to them: for this is the law and the prophets

13 J Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to depruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto ive good life, and few there be that find it.

> 15 9 Beware of false prophets ;

### St. MATTHEW.

cious Creator and Preserver of all things, give fuch things as are needful to those who earneftly pray for them?

12. And now if God thus deals with Mankind, as to give them whatever they could reasonably expect from a most kind and loving Father; Then ought ye also so to deal with one another, as that every one be willing to do that always to another which he can in reason expect another This is that great should do to him. Rule, wherein is contained our whole Duty towards our Neighbour: This is the fum of true Religion, of Righteousness and Equity: This is what Nature and the Reason of Things teaches: And this is what all God's Revelations to Mankind in the Law and the Prophets, tend ultimately to establish.

13. These Precepts may perhaps feem hard to Men that are covetous, fenfual, and lovers of the World; and there are but few who will be at the pains to practife them fincerely. true: But if ye will attain eternal Happiness, ye must resolve to be Imitators of those few, and to be content to follow them in the narrow Path of Virtue. The Way to Destruction is broad, foft and easie; and 'tis in this that the careless Multitude walk.

14. But the Way to Happiness is narrow, and the Paths of Virtue are rough; and there are but few that can deny themselves the Pleasures, and Vanities, and Gaieties of the World, that they may be able to walk there-

15. There are many indeed that will pretend to conduct you in this Way D

phatical.

and it n you: re shall , and it

ed unto

VII.

aft out

of thy

ot that

unto

ner caft

before

tram-

er their

again

ery one receihe that indeth: that n t shallbe

nat man you, f his fon will give he ask a

give him ye then know

cious

to Happiness, But take care that ye be not deceived by false Pretenders. They will come to you with great shows of Piety, and specious appearances of Humility and Innocence; But their secret Design will be to pervert you by false Doctrines, to serve their Lusts; and promote their own gain, by robbing and devouring you.

16. Ye shall know them from sincere Preachers of Righteousness, by the tendency of their Doctrine, and by their Works and Actions; by their Pride, or their Covetousness, or their Sensuality, or their Contentiousness, or the like. For as Thorns cannot bring forth Grapes, or Thistles bear Figs; fo the Scope of a Man's Doctrine and the Actions of his Life, will discover themselves to be suitable to the Dispositions of his Mind.

17. As every good Tree bringeth forth good Fruit, and every corrupt Tree bad Fruit; fo every good Man doth good things, and every evil Man evil things.

18. A good Man can no more do evil things, than a good Tree can bring forth bad Fruit; and a bad Man, not-withstanding all his Hypocrisie, can no more really and habitually do good things, than a corrupt Tree can bring forth good Fruit.

19. Every Tree that bringeth not forth good Fruit, however it may look fair and be full of Leaves, is yet by Men counted good for nothing, but to be cut down and burnt: In like manner every Man, whose Doctrine tends not to Virtue, and whose Works are not righteous, and just, and good; whatever Pretences he may make to Piety and Religion; is certainly a bad

which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

n

f

k

to

W

in

in

ou

na

W

Ip

In

de

tha

Sci

Lo

Ron I al

tha

17 Even fo every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but- a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

12 Every treethat bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down and cast into the fire.

20 Where-

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 9 Not every one that faith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

22 Many will fay to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophefied in thy name? and inthy name have cast outdevils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

ıt.

ee

th

er

ee

od

hat

rth ren nto

ere-

23 And then will I profess unto them, Inever knew you: depart from me ye that work iniquity.

Man, and, if he continues fo, designed

by God to destruction.

20. By these Fruits therefore of good and evil Dispositions and Actions, may ye certainly diftinguish the Preachers of true Religion, from Deceivers and false Prophets.

21. And according to these fruits of good and evil Lives, will God himfelf judge and reward or punish Men. For not every one that makes an outward profession of Religion, and believes and calls upon my Name; but they only, who in their Lives obey the Commandments of God, shall enter in-

to the Kingdom of Heaven.

22. Many will fay unto me in the Day of Judgment; Lord, have we not believed and embraced thy true Religion, and taught and preached it to others? And have we not had fo great Faith, as even to cast out Devils and work Miracles in thy Name? Wilt thou not therefore now receive us, and acknowledge us for thy true Disciples.

23. But I shall reject them, faying; Notwithstanding you have indeed done all these things, yet fince in your Lives and Conversations ye did not obey my Commandments, but were proud or covetous, or fenfual, or contentious, therefore I never \* looked upon you as my true Disciples; neither do I now approve or acknowledge you:

<sup>\*</sup> The words &dinore eyear, I never knew you, fignific in Scripture Phrase, I never approved you. Thus Psalm 1, 6, The Lord knoweth, that is, approveth the way of the righteous. Rom. 7, 15, That which I do, symworw I know not, that is, I allow not. So I Cor. 8, 3, If any man love God, he is known, that is, approved of him.

(

th

au

as

A

11

fro

gre

low

the

and

fayi

tho

ma

fort

tou

ing,

clea

diat

Was

fait!

Depart from me, all ye that have lived

wickedly.

Wherefore he that shall not 24. only hear and receive these my Instructions, but also remember, and consider and practise, and live according to them; fuch a Man may be compared to one that builds his House upon a Rock.

25. For as a House founded upon a Rock, stands unshaken and firm, against all the affaults of Rains and Floods, and Storms: So the Man who in his Life and Conversation actually practifes and obeys my Instructions, will firmly refift all the temptations of the Devil, the allurements of Pleasure, and the terrors of Persecution; and shall be able to stand in the final Judgment, and be rewarded by God.

26. But he that shall hear and receive my Instructions, and yet not obey them in his Life and Actions; may fitly be compared to a foolish Man, who builds his House upon the

Sand.

- 27. For as a House without foundation, built upon the loofe Sand, is not able to refift the assaults of Winds and Floods, but is eafily overturned and ruined by them: So the Man who hears, and believes, and makes profeffion of true Religion, but lives not fuitably to the Precepts thereof; cannot relift the violence of Temptation, and will not be able to ftand before God in Judgment, but shall perish for ever.
- 28. Thus Jesus ended his Sermon; and the People which heard him were surprized with admiration at the Excellency of his Discourse,

24 Therefore, whofoever heareth thefe fayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wifeman which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the floodscame, and the winds blew, and and beat upon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded

upon arock.

- 26 And every one that heareth thefe fayings of mine, and doth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the fand:
- 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell, and great wasthe fall of it.

28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were aftonished at his doctrine.

29 For

# Chap. VIII.

29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

ne ne nd at at,

ed

one

ne,

nto

nich

pon

rain the

the

and

oufe:

reat

came

Jefus

e fay-

were

9 For

his

### St. MATTHEW.

29. For his Doctrine was not like the Preachings of the Jewish Doctors, formal and trifling, full of vain Traditions, and depending on the groundless Authority of Rabbies and Heads of Sects: But the things which he spake, were Great and Noble; and he delivered them with a Voice of Majesty and Authority, of Gravity and Truth.

### CHAP. VIII.

A Leprous Person healed, ver. 1. A Centurion's Servant healed, ver. 5. Peter's Mother in-law healed, ver. 14. The Poverty of Christ, ver. 18. Of Perseverance, ver. 21. A Tempest miraculously stilled, ver. 23. Devils cast out of a Man, and entring into Swine, ver. 28.

WHen he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, there came a leper andworshipped him, faying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And Jefus put forth his hand and touched him, faying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprofie was cleanfed.

4 And Jesus faith unto him,

1. Jesus having finished his Discourse, and coming down from the Mountain; a great multitude of People gathered themselves together about him, and followed him.

2. And there met him a Man that was Leprous, and fell down before him, and intreated him, to take pity on him and heal him; faying, Lord, I firmly believe, that if you please, you have Power to make me clean from this Disease.

3. Jesus being pleased at the Man's Faith, touched him with his Hand, and said, I will do what you desire; Be clean from your Disease. And his Leprose was immediately cured.

4. But Jesus, not being willing to give any unnecessary Offence or Scandal to the Jews, charged the Man, saying: Do not go immediately and publish

) 3 e

C

hea

and

tha

ly I

hav

gre

in I

you

con

and

fit

han

lac

dor

dre

dor

inte

the

ing

of :

unt

Go

tho

bei

An

hea

fan

lef

Pet

fav the a fe

cd

every where, that you have been healed by me; but go and shew your self regularly to the Priest, who is to judge of your being clean; and offer the Sacrifice which the Law requires for your Purification; \* that we may convince them of the reality of the Cureand yet not give them any occasion of Calumny.

5 & 6. ¶ After this, Jesus went to Capernaum; and as he was entring into the City, there met him Messengers from a Centurion, or Captain of the Roman Soldiers, to intreat him for a Servant in his House, lying very

dangerously ill of a Palsie.

7. Jefus knowing the Man's Faith and Humility, and intending by making the Virtues of this Stranger more confpicuous, to take an occasion of rebuking the Pride and Insidelity of the Jews; faith, I will go down to the House and heal him.

8. The Man fent again other Friends, and answered; Lord, I am originally a Gentile, and have been long a Sinner, and am not worthy that you should honour my House with your Presence: I know that if you do but say the Word,

my Servant shall be healed.

9. For if I, who am but an inferiour Officer in an Army, can give the word of Command, and be immediately obeyed by my Servants: How much more may you, to whom God hath committed fuch Power and Authority, fay but a Word, and what you fay shall be effected?

See thou tell no man, but go thyway, shew thy felf to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

5 ¶ And when Jefus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, befeeching him,

6 And faying, Lord, my fervant lieth at home fick of the palfie, grievoufly tormented.

7 And Jesus faith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The Centurion answered and said, Lord, Iam not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my fervant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having foldiers under me: and I fay to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my fervant, Do this, and he dothit.

<sup>\*</sup> Among the various Senses, which Expositors give of these words, in magnicum auris; this seems the most probable.

no When Jefus heardit, he marvelled and faid unto them that followed, Verily I fay unto you, I have not found fo great faith, no not in Ifrael.

you, that many shall come from the east, and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.

e

1-

nt

ſ-

h

ill

n

d,

r-

d-

19

he

ly il-

an

la-

er

nis

0-

er,

n-

er-

nd

efe

At

12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of of teeth.

13 And Jefus faid unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so beit done unto thee. And his fervant was healed in the felfsame hour.

14 ¶ And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives motherlaid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and

### St. MATTHEW.

10. At this Answer Jesus was surprized, and said to his Disciples, and to the People that followed him; Verily I have not found so great Faith among the Jews themselves, who have lived always under a Revelation of the Will of God, and have had the constant Use of the Scriptures and the Prophets, as this Stranger has now discovered.

the Children of Abraham and the Patriarchs, the peculiar People of God, to whom the Promises of Salvation are made: But affuredly I tell you, that many Strangers out of the Heathen World, shall come from all Parts and join themselves to the true Church of God here on Earth; and shall hereafter be received with Abraham, and Isaac, and Facob, into the Kingdom of God in Heaven:

12. While the Jews, to whom the Promises did originally belong, exclude themselves out of the true Church of God here, and shall hereafter be thrust out of the Kingdom of Heaven into the Darkness which is without, where shall be fruitless Repentance and endless Woe.

13. Then fending back the Meffengers to the Centurion, he bad them fay thus to him: As you have believed, fo is it done to you. And his Servant was found to be healed at that very instant.

14. ¶ After this, Jesus retired from the multitude, and went into *Peter's* House; and there he found *Peter's* Wises Mother lying upon the Bed sick of a Fever.

15. And he took her by the Hand and helped her up; and the Fever was immediately cured fo entirely, that her

Strength

Strength returned to her, and she made Provision for them, and they sat down to Meat, and she served them.

16. But as foon as the Evening was come, and the Sabbath paft, the Multitude gathered together again about Jefus, and they brought to him difeafed and possessed Persons; and he cast out the evil Spirits, and healed all their Difeases with a Word.

17. So that not only by his suffering in our stead upon the Cross, but even in This Sense also, by his curing Mens Diseases, was suffilled that Prophecy of Esaias; He took our instrmities, and bare our sicknesses, Isa.

18. ¶ Another time, Jesus being pressed with a great multitude of People, commanded his Disciples to get ready a Boat to carry him over the Lake.

19. Which while they were doing, a certain Doctor of the Law, who imagined that Jesus would shortly come to great Glory and Power, saith unto him; Lord, I will be your Follower, and go along with you whithersoever you go.

20. But Jesus answered him: If you hope to find splendid Entertainments with me, you are much mistaken; For I am so far from that, that I have not so much as a House wherein to lodge my self.

21. Another, who had already followed Jefus and was his Disciple, faid unto him: Lord, I will continue to be your Disciple and Follower; only suffer me to go home, and perform the last Rites of my Father's Funeral, and set in order his Family and Estate.

## Chap. VIII.

CI

unt

me

bur

he

fhi

lov

the

inf

fhi

W

he

ple

an

in

un

ye

lit

ar

th

fe

2 8

W

is

W

cl

h

tl

to

the fever left her: and fhe arose and ministred unto them.

16 ¶ When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was fpoken by Efaias the prophet, faying, Himfelf took our infirmities, and bare our fickneffes.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 And a certain fcribecame, and faid unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jefus faith unto him; The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of Man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But

# Chap. VIII.

.

d

0

10

m

f-

s: he

is

ed

ht

ch

ai-

y-

ok

nd

5.

ien

ul-

m,

nd-

rto

ain

aid

er,

hee

iou

ith

OX-

the

Son

not

his

her

**faid** 

fuf-

and

But

22 But Jefus faid unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

24 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was assept.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us:

we perish.

26 And he faith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a greatcalm?

27 But the men marvelled, faying, Whatmanner of man is this, that even the winds and the fea cbey him!

28 ¶ And when he was come to the other fide, into the country of

### St. MATTHEW.

22. But Jesus answered him: You have forsaken all your earthly Relatiens and Fortunes, to become a Preacher of Righteousness; and if your Heart look back to any of those temporal Things, you are not worthy of this sacred Ministry. No; do you continue to follow me; and let others, who have not taken upon them this holy Office, take care to bury their own Dead.

23. ¶ By this time the Disciples had provided Jesus a Boat, and he went in-

to it together with his Disciples.

24. And as they were rowing over the Lake, a great from of Wind arose, so that the Water grew rough, and the Billows beat into the Boat. But Jesus himself was assep.

25. And the Disciples ran to him in a great Fright and waked him, saying;

Lord, help us, we are just finking.

26. But Jesus designing to inure them to bear all hardships couragiously and without fear, answered: O ye fearful and distrustful Men! Have ye thus long heard my Doctrine and seen my Miracles, and dare ye not yet trust your selves to the Providence of God? However, he rose up, and commanded the Winds to cease, and the Waters of the Lake to be still; and there was suddenly a very great Calm.

27. At which both the Men of the Boat, and the Disciples themselves were exceedingly surprized, saying, How great is this Man? And how extraordinary is his Power? That even the Winds

and the Waters obey him.

28. ¶ Now when Jesus had croffed the Lake, and was landed on the other fide in the Country of the Gerge-fenes, there met him two possessed Men, which used to wander in desart Places,

and

dov

inte

rish

kep

we

tot

eve

wh

the

dev

wh

to

wh

the

tha

ou

0

h

and among the Tombs, and were fo exceeding strong that they could not be bound with any Chains, and so fierce that no Man durst pass that way for fear of them; these Men by the especial Providence of God, met Jesus at his landing.

29. At the fight of whom, the Devils which possessed the Men, knowing and being terrified at his Divine Power and Virtue, cried out immediately; Wherefore, O thou Son of the most High God, art thou come to torment us, before the Time appointed by God for our final Judgment?

30. Now there was at a distance a

great Herd of Swine feeding.

31. And when Jesus had commanded the Devils to come out of the Men, they begged leave of him to enter into the Herd of Swine.

32. And he \*gave them leave. And they came out of the Men, and entred into the Swine; and all the Swine ran headlong immediately down a Precipice into the Lake, and were drowned.

the Gergesenes, there met him two posfessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, faying, What have we to do with thee, Jefus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many fwine, feeding.

31. So the devils befought him, faying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he faid unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of fwine: and behold, the whole herd of fwine ran violently

33. At

<sup>\*</sup> Whether our Saviour permitted this, to shew the great power of evil Spirits, and how terrible the effects of their Malice would be upon Men, if they were not restrained by God: Or whether it was to punish the Gergesenes for keeping these Beasts, which were a Snare and Offence to the Jews, their Flesh not being permitted to be eaten: Or, for whatever other wise Reason it was: Certain it is, that this is the only Miracle our Saviour wrought, whereby any Man suffered damage.

down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

e

f

e

.

S

o

 $\frac{d}{d}$ 

t

l,

f

y

r

n

r

t

34And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

### St. MATTHEW.

33. At which the Keepers of the Swine, greatly terrified, fled presently into the City, and told what misfortune had befel their Swine, and how the two possessed Men were suddenly cured and restored to their right Minds.

34. Whereupon almost all the Men of the City came out to see Jesus; and being more terrified with the Power of Jesus, and vexed at the loss of the Swine, than pleased with his Goodness in the Preservation of the Men, they desired him to depart out of their Country.

### CHAP. IX.

A Palsie cured; and Christ's Power of remitting Sins, occasionally asserted, ver. 1. The calling of Matthew, and Christ's eating with Publicans and Sinners, ver. 9. The Disciples not fasting, defended, ver. 14. A Woman raised from the dead, and a Bloody-slux cured, ver. 18. Two blind Men cured, ver. 27. A dumb Man cured, ver. 32. The want of good Ministers, ver. 35.

ND he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 And behold, they brought to him a man fick of I. JESUS perceiving hereby their difposition of Mind, and their unpreparedness to receive his Doctrine, went again into the Boat, and crossed over the Lake, and returned into his own City Capernaum.

2. And while he was there, they brought to him a Man so ill of the Palsie, that he was forced to be carried

upon

paf

the

nar

fitt

of

fait

lov

arc

hir

to

be

ca

an

hi

P

ſa

pl

y

P

n

upona Bed. To whom Jesus, perceiving both his and his Friends Faith by their Diligence to get to him through the Crowd, said; Son, be of good Courage; your Sins, which were the cause of your Disease, are forgiven.

3. At this Saying, many of the Fewis Doctors who were present, were
greatly offended in their Minds, and
said within themselves; what a Blasphemer is this Man, to undertake to
forgive Sins, which no one but God
alone has Authority to do!

4. But Jesus perceiving their Thoughts, said; Why are ye thus disturbed at my Words: And why do you reason thus perversely and enviously in your own

Minds?

5. For what great Difference is there between forgiving the Man's Sins, and healing his Difease? Or, what less Power or Authority does it require, to heal the Difease which is the Consequence of his Sins, than to forgive the Sins which were the Cause of his Difease?

6. But I expressed my self thus, that ye might see that the Messiah has Power upon Earth to forgive Sins; God confirming my Sentence of Absolution, by the visible Miracle of healing the Man's Disease. Then Jesus turning himself to the sick Man, said; Arise, take up your Bed, and go home.

7. And the Man was immediately healed, and the use of his Limbs returned to him entirely; so that he took

up his Bed and carried it Home.

8. And the Multitude being convinced by so undeniable a Miracle, of the Divine Power residing in Christ, glorised God for having sent to them a

the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes faid within themfelves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jefus knowing their thoughts, faid, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is eatier to fay, Thy fins be for given thee? or to fay, Arife and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive fins, (then faith he to the fick of the palfie) Arife, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his

house.

8 But when the multitude faw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

on

ee-

aid

the

of

ins

ld,

bes

m-

an

W-

ts,

ore

our

is

hy

ee?

nd

ay

on

rer

ive

he

al-

up

to

ſe,

his

he

it,

nd

ch

V-

C. .

9 ¶ And as Jefus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he

arose, and followed

to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sat down with him and his disciples.

Pharifees faw it, they faid unto his difciples, Why eateth your mafter with publicans and finners?

12 But when Jefus heard that, he faid unto them, They that be whole need not a phyfician, but they that are fick.

13 But go yeand learn what that meaneth, I willhave mercy and not facri-

Prophet endued with fuch extraordinary Authority.

9. ¶ After this, Jesus departed from Capernaum, and went towards the Lake; and as he was in the way, he saw a Man, named Matthew, sitting at the Custom-House, or Tax-gatherers Stall, receiving Tribute. And Jesus said to him, Follow me; and the Man without delay left his Business, and sollowed him.

10. And he invited Jesus home with him to his House: And when they fat down to Meat, many Tax-gatherers, who were Men hateful to the Jews; and many finful Men of their Acquaintance, sat down with Jesus and his Dis-

ciples.

faw, they were moved with Envy; but not daring to provoke Jesus himself, who had formerly with Authority reproved their Pride, they asked his Disciples; Why doth your Master, who pretends to be a Holy and Sanctified Person, keep Company with the worst of Men, with Tax-gatherers and Sinners?

12. But Jesus hearing them ask the Question, answered: As those that are in Health, need not the Assistance of a Physician, but those that are Sick; so those that are Righteous, need not my Exhortations to Repentance, but those that are Sinners. Since therefore ye account your selves just Persons, who do not need my Instructions, why are ye angry with me for keeping Company with such as do?

13. And if ye account it an unfit thing, or a kind of defilement, for a Man to keep Company with Sinners, whom he may advantage by his Advice

vice

elf

an

ne

bo

int

bo

fp:

un

th

ru

hinda

no

an

on

liv

ro

di

av

di

of

ye

bis

he

W

hi

be

ed

W

fai of

th

th

W

vice and Instruction; what, think you, means that Saying of the Prophet Hosea, (Hos. 6. 6.) I will have mercy rather than sacrifice? For my part, I think it the best thing a Man can do, to converse with such Persons with designs of Mercy and Charity; and the great Design of my coming into the World, was not to call the Righteous, but those that have been Sinners, to Repentance and Reformation.

14. ¶ After this, the Disciples of John the Baptist, who being used to Fasting and Austerities, did through humane Infirmity somewhat envy the Disciples of Christ, who used no such Severities; came to Jesus and asked him, saying; Why, since we and the Pharisees fast often, do not your Disciples, if they pretend to any extraordi-

nary Holiness, fast also?

15. Jesus answered; As the Guests at a Marriage-seast, cannot without absurdity fast, so long as they are with the Bridegroom at the Feast; so my Disciples cannot fast, so long as I, their Master, am with them; but when I am taken from them, then they shall begin to fast.

16. For as it is very improper and inconfistent, to put a piece of new Cloth into an old Garment: So it is very improper that my Disciples should mix Mourning and Rejoycing, by fasting while they have the enjoyment of my immediate Presence.

17. And as it is very improper to put new Wine into old Bottles, which will thereby be in danger † to be rent: So fice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but finners to repentance,

to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bride-groom is with them? but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles:

<sup>+</sup> Note, That the Bottles of the Ancients were not like ours, but of Leather, which when it was old, would grow rotten and be apt to rend.

ot

me

oles

ıg,

the

but

ot?

faid

the

ide-

, as

ide-

em?

will

the

1 be

em,

hey

put-

new

old

that

o fill

rom

l the

rfe.

wine

ttles:

ours,

and

elfe

do

elsethe bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved,

18 ¶ While he fpake thefe things unto them, behold, there came a certain rulerandworshipped him, faying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 9 (And behold, a woman which was difeafed with an iffue blood twelve years, came behind him and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her felf, I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he faw her, he faid, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made

### St. MATTHEW.

it would be very improper to put my Disciples upon Fasting and Austerities, while I am giving them the first Instructions for their Ministry: But all such things ought to be accommodated, to the Conditions of the Persons, and to

the Circumstances of the Time,

While Jesus was speaking these things, there came a Ruler of the Synagogue, and fell down before him, and intreated him, faying: Lord, I have a Daughter lying now in my House so very ill, that by this time I fear she may even be dead. Yet by the greatness of your Power and the Miracles which I have heard of, I am convinced that if you will please to come down and lay your Hand upon her, you can cause her to recover.

19. Jesus, as he was always willing to do good to those who desired any thing of him with Faith and Sincerity, immediately went down with the Man to his House: And his Disciples and the Multitude followed him.

20. And as he was in the Way, a Woman that had been twelve Years troubled with a bloody Flux, and was ashamed to confess her Disease publickly before the Multitude, came behind him privately, and touched the Hem of his Coat.

21. For the verily perfwaded her felf, that if she could but touch his Clothes,

fhe should be healed.

2.2. Accordingly as foon as the touch ed his Coat, she was immediately heal-But Jesus by his Divine Power knowing what was done, and not being willing that so excellent an Instance of Faith should pass undiscovered, turned himself to the Woman, and said unto her; Daughter, be of good Courage,

your great Faith hath obtained the Cure

of your Disease.

23. By this time, Jesus was come near the Ruler's House: And when he went in, he found the young Woman dead, and her Relations tumultuously lamenting and bewailing over her.

24. But knowing the Power of God, and what he intended to do; he told them the young Woman was not dead, but asleep; and bad them all go out. But they, knowing certainly that she was dead, laughed at him and derided him.

25. Then he put them all out of the Room, except the Young Womans Parents and iome of his own Disciples: And he took her by the Hand, and she rose up, and was cured perfectly.

26. And tho' he commanded them, not to publish the thing abroad, yet the Fame of fo extraordinary a Miracle presently spread over all the Country.

27. Now when Jesus departed from thence, two blind Men, who had heard of his wonderful Works, followed him, crying out; O thou Son of David, we believe thee to be the expected Messiah, we beseech thee have pity on us.

28. And when he was come into the House, the blind Men came to him. And Jesus, to inculcate perpetually the necessity of Faith and the evil of Unbelies, asked them; Do ye indeed believe that I am sent of God, and have Power to do these things? And they answered, Yes.

29. Then he laid his Hands upon their Eyes, and faid; As ye have believed, so be it done to you

whole from that hour.)

23 And when Jefus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise.

24 He faid unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but fleepeth. And they laughed him to fcorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

th

fp fa

ou br

du

W

de

the

the

ve

Wa

Ifr

fee

ou

thi

of

26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Jefus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and faying, Thou fon of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus faith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, faying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And

30 And their eyes were opened, and Jefus firaitly charged them, faying, See that no man know it.

e-

W

3

to

10

id,

nd

to

he

out

in;

the

aid

me

oad

le-

nce,

fol-

ng,

hou

ave

n he

the

men

and

into

that

his?

im,

uch-

eyes,

ding

e it

And

3 i Butthey, when they were departed, fpread abroad his fame in all that country.

32 ¶ As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharifees faid, He cafteth out the devils through the prince of the devils.

### St. MATTHEW.

30. And their Sight was immediately restored to them. But Jesus having already done many Miracles; and either knowing that the unbelieving Pharisees would be provoked to apprehend him before his time; or that the admiring Multitude would be strongly moved to come together feditiously, and make him (according to their false Notions of the Messias) a temporal King; or else that he might set an Example of Humility, and how we ought not to be defirous of receiving Glory for our good Actions; straitly charged the blind Men, that they should not divulge this Miracle abroad.

31. But they nevertheless spread the Fame of it, through all the Country.

32. ¶ When these Men were gone, the People brought to Jesus a Man that was dumb, and possessed with a Devil.

33. And Jesus cast out the Devil, and the dumb Man presently spake. And the People, seeing that all manner of incurable Diseases were with equal ease healed by Jesus with only a Word speaking, said; Certainly this Man must be the Messias; for there never arose a Prophet in Israel, that did so many and so great Miracles in such a manner.

34. But the *Pharifees* on the contrary, moved with Rage and Envy, refolved to oppose him; and though they could not deny the Miracles which they saw with their Eyes, yet resolving some way or other to prejudice the People against him, they said; 'tis not by the Power of God, but by Confederacy with the Prince of the Devils, that this Man casteth out Devils.

35. ¶ And Jesus travelled through all the Cities and Villages, expounding the Scripture in their Synagogues, and teaching them the true Doctrine of the Christian Religion, and proving his Authority and Divine Commission by the miraculous healing of all forts of

Diseases among the People.

of People gathered together about him, he had Compassion on them, because they seemed to be weary and scattered, wandring for want of faithful Guides and Teachers, as Sheep having no Shepherd. They were willing to receive the Instructions of true Religion, and desirous to be directed in the way of Happiness; but the Jewish Doctors, Scribes and Pharises, had filled all things with Hypocrify and vain Traditions, and there were none who taught the People with Sincerity and Faithfulness.

37. Then Jesus said to his Disciples: The Harvest indeed is great; there is a great Number of People, that are willing and prepared to receive Instruction: But the Labourers in this Harvest are few; there are but few who are able and fitted to instruct these People, in the Ways of Righteousness and

Truth.

38. Pray ye therefore to God, that he would provide skilful and faithful Ministers, to be sent forth to preach the Gospel through the World.

35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

36 But when he faw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

d

t

C

to

fi

n

0

fi

ca

dr

Ja

be

br

the

an

pu

Le

nai

naa

Ifc

bet.

Jesi and the

37 Then faith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will fend forth labourers into his harvest.

CHAP.

s

d

í-

1,

y

ne

he

es,

th

n,

ed,

ed

12-

he

es,

y is

the

ere-

the

will

rers

P.

## CHAP. X.

Christ's Instructions to his Apostles, at their being sent out to preach, ver. 1. The Biessing of those who receive them, ver. 40.

ND when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelve apoflles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother.

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publican, James the fon of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose furname was Thaddeus,

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus fent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go 1. THE N Jesus calling together his Disciples, chose out of them twelve Men, to be sent forth to preach the Gospel. And that they might do it with the greater Authority and Efficacy, he gave them Power to prove their Commission by the miraculous Works of casting out Devils, and healing all manner of Diseases.

2, 3, 4. Now the Names of the Twelve Apostles, are these.

- 1. Peter.
- 2. Andrew.
- 3. James.
- 4. John.
- 5. Philip.
- 6. Bartholomew.
- 7. Thomas.
- 8. Matthew.
- 9. Another James.
- 10. Thaddæus, or Jude.
- 11. Simon the Canaanite.
- 12. Judas Iscariot.
- 5. These Twelve Jesus sent forth to preach the Gospel. And he gave them their Charge, saying; Do not go among any of the Gentiles or Samaritans, because the Salvation of the Gospel must first be offered to God's peculiar People.

6. But go in the first place to the poor deluded fews, who were originally the peculiar People of God; and offer Them first, the gracious Terms of Repentance and Reconciliation.

7. Preaching to them every where as ye go; that God is now about to establish the Kingdom of the Messias, wherein he will be worshipped in Spirit and in Truth, and, instead of all external Rites and Ceremonies, will accept nothing but Repentance and sincere Obedience.

8. And to convince them that ye do not this rashly and without Authority; heal their Sick, cleanse their Lepers, raise their Dead, cast out Devils; and do all these things freely and without reward, with the same Liberality as ye have received Power from me to do them.

9. And because the Design of this your Journey is wholly Spiritual and Heavenly, for the Instruction and Conversion of Mankind; therefore make no Provision for it of any earthly things; of Gold, or Silver, or any other Money.

no. But go just as ye are; each Man with the same Coat, Shoes, and Staff, that he now has; † without providing any other Clothes, Shoes, or Staff; or any Bag of Provisions for the Way. For while ye are thus employed in labouring for the Benefit and eternal Welfare of others, ye may reasonably expect to be sustained by them for the present.

not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, faying, The kingdom of heaven isat hand.

8 Heal the fick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give,

le

u

th

o Provide neither gold, nor filver, nor brafs in your purfes:

your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: (for the workman is worthy of his meat)

<sup>+</sup> Thus this Passage, where the Disciples are forbidden to provide a Staff, agrees well with Mark 6, 8, wherethey are permitted to take a Staff.

a-

to

he

o,

ren.

ck,

ers,

caft

y ye

ree-

ither

nor

rfes:

p for

s, nel-

or yet

orthy

the

nel-

11 And into whatfoever city or town ye shallenter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, faluteit.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha, in the day of judgment, then for that city.

21

### St. MATTHEW.

City or Town, enquire what Person dwells therein of Piety and Probity, who may probably receive the Truth of the Gospel, and be affisting to you in your preaching of Righteousness. And when ye have found such an House, accept its Entertainment, and continue therein without removing, till you depart out of that City.

12. And when ye go first into an House, say, Peace be to it; and pray for the Blessing of God upon the whole

Family.

13. And if it be a pious and deferving Family, God will accordingly bless and prosper it: But if not, your Prayers shall return into your own Bosom; and the Blessing, which they render themselves unworthy of, shall be redoubled by God upon your selves.

14. And if any House or City shall refuse to entertain you, and shall reject your Doctrine, and despise your Words, and refuse to be reformed; when ye depart out of that House or City, shake off even the Dust of your Feet against them; declaring, that since they have wilfully rejected the last means of Salvation which God has offered them by you, ye will have nothing more to do with them, but leave them to the Judgment of God.

15. Affuredly I tell you, the Punishment that shall be inflicted on the Inhabitants of such a City, shall be more terrible in the Day of Vengeance, than that which was inflicted on the Inhabitants of Sodom. Because the Inhabitants of Sodom might have repented, if they had heard your Preaching and seen your Miracles; but these Men having rejected greater Of-

E 3

fers

are per-

I And

lden to

et

th

th

cl

dr

ga

pl

be

fo

bu

to

fa

pe

ci

no

fay

no

th

til

CO

fers of Mercy, shall be liable to a feverer Punishment.

16. And now, behold, I fend you forth as Sheep among Wolves; gentle, harmless, and innocent Persons, among passionate and cruel Men. Be ye therefore Wise and Prudent, that ye give them no just occasion of reproaching you or your Doctrine; and be meek and gentle, that ye may win those that are of good Tempers, and avoid provoking those that are bad.

17. But when ye have done all you can, you must expect nevertheless to be persecuted by wicked and cruel Men. Though ye be never so careful to avoid giving them any just Offence, yet merely for your continuing to preach the Gospel, they will carry you before their Magistrates, as Malefactors; and scourge you in their Synagogues, as Apostates.

18. And ye shall be brought before Governours, and Princes, and Kings, for the Gospel sake; by which means your Innocence shall be discovered, and your Doctrine made known, even to the Gentiles and to the whole World; that they also hearing of your Doctrine and Miracles, and seeing your Simplicity, Sincerity, and Innocence, may either embrace the Truth, or be left without Excuse.

19. Now when Men shall thus bring you before the Magistrates to be judged, be not solicitous to meditate what ye shall say in your Defence, or in what manner ye shall apologize for your selves to the best advantage. For your Works and Doctrine shall be their own Vindication; and God, who by his peculiar Providence supplies you with all other Things that are necessary or convenient, will also at that Time provide for your Defence.

16 ¶ Behold, I fend you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

17 But bewareof men, for they will deliver you up to the councels, and they will fcourge you in their fynagogues.

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

20 For

20 For it is not ye that fpeak, but the spirit, of your Father which speak-

eth in you.

I

t of

ere-

nts,

as

reof

will the

hey

u in

fhall

fore

and

ake,

у а-

the

they

take

10 W

beak,

riven

fame

Thall

For

5.

21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rife up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names fake: but he that endureth to the end, shall be faved.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I fay unto you, ye shall not have gone over the cities of Ifrael till the fon of man be come.

### St. MATTHEW.

20. So that it shall not be so much you your felves that shall plead your own Cause, as the Spirit of God that shall plead for you.

21. Only expect, that the Perfecution which shall be raised against you for preaching the Gospel, will be very great and unnatural. For the Purity and Holiness of your Doctrine being utterly inconfistent with the Covetousness, and contrary to the Passions and Lusts of Men, will provoke Men incorrigibly enflaved to these Vices, to break through all the Bonds not only of Virtue and Humanity, but even of Relation and natural Affection, to perfecute and destroy you: fo that even Fathers and Sons and Brethren shall kill one another, in fierceness against the Truth.

22. Nay, and the generality of Men will become your Enemies; the whole Stream of the World will run against you and discourage you. But he who notwithstanding all this Opposition shall persevere in his Faith and his Obedience to the End, and shall not be moved by these Difficulties and Persecutions to forfake his Religion and Integrity follong as he lives; shall receive the Reward of everlasting Life.

23. Nevertheless, though ye ought to bear Persecutions chearfully, and never to be overcome by them, when the Providence of God brings them unavoidably upon you; yet, if ye have Opportunity, when ye are perfecuted in one City, ye may flee unto another. For affuredly I tell you, ye shall not have preached through all the Cities of the Jews, before the Kingdom of Christ shall be gloriously manifested in the final destruction of that Nation.

E 4

24. And be not discontented, that ye must needs suffer Persecutions and Afflictions. For if I my self endure all manner of Reproaches, and Persecutions and Afflictions; you have no manner of reason to expect or hope to escape better. The Disciple is not greater than his Master, nor the Servant above his Lord.

25. Ought not ye to be well fatisfied, if ye meet with no worse Treatment than I have done? If they have not spared to call me Beelzebub, and compare the Son of God to the chief of Devils; what reason can ye have to expect, that they should not deal as ill

with you?

26. However, be not afraid of them. The Doctrine which you are to preach, is not fuch as that ye need through Fear to diffemble or conceal it. All things shall in time be openly and publickly made known; and then your Innocence shall be fully vindicated, and the Goodness of your Cause sufficiently made to appear.

27. Whatever therefore I tell you fecretly, do you openly declare; and what I teach you in private, that preach ye couragiously in the most publick Places, and proclaim openly to all the World.

28. And be not afraid of Men, the utmost Power of whose Malice can extend only to the killing of the Body, but your Soul they cannot hurt: But be careful above all things to obey the Will of God, who, if he be displeased, can destroy both Soul and Body in Hell.

29. If ye be constant in your Obedience to God, his Providence will watch over you in a peculiar manner; and Men shall never be able to afflict you any farther, than He shall see expedient either for your present Advan-

24 The discipleis not above his master, northeservantabove his lord.

for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servantas his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his houshold?

26 Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house tops.

28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the foul: but rather fear him which is able to deftroy both foul and body in hell.

29 Are not two fparrows fold for a farthing? and one of them shall

no

is

hat er,

his

ave

of

oub,

ore

nem

not here

ered

e re-

that

wn.

tell,

ight:

ar in

reach

nouse

r not

ill the

ot a-

foul:

him

to de-

al and

t two

d for

1 shall

and

not

not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 But who foever fhalldeny me before men, him will I alfo deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 Think not that I am come to fend peace on earth; I came not to fend peace, but a fword.

tage or your future Happiness. There is not one of the smallest and meanest Creatures upon Earth, that ever dies without the Providence and Disposal of God: How much less can ye perish, without his Knowledge and Permission?

30. Nay, so far from that; there is not so much as a Hair of your Head, or any the smallest thing about you, which is not taken notice of and observed by Providence.

31. Be not therefore afraid what Men can do unto you. Ye are of much more worth than the other Creatures upon Earth: And if nothing can happen even to the meanest of those Creatures, without the Providence and Direction of God; how much less to you?

32. Here then is a certain trial of Mens Faith and Obedience. He who notwithstanding all the Terrors and Threatnings of Persecution, shall still sincerely persevere in his Obedience to God, and without Fear continue stedfast in the Profession of true Religion; shall be owned by me before God and Angels, as a worthy Disciple, and shall receive the Reward of eternal Life.

33. But he that for fear of Mens Hatred and Persecution, shall renounce and be ashamed of the Profession of true Religion, or act contrary to the Precepts of it; shall be denied by me before God and Angels, as an unworthy Disciple, and shall lose the Reward of everlasting Life.

34. And do not perfuade your felves that ye may avoid this Trial. Do not think, that the World will entertain the Christian Religion in the Love and Peaceableness of it. I tell you, nay;

but

but wicked Men will make it an occafion of Hatredand Quarrels.

35. Nay, to fuch a heighth will thefe Contentions upon the account of Religion arise, that a Man's nearest Friends and Relations shall become his bitterest and most crue Enemies.

36. And even those of a Man's own Family, shall hate and persecute him

to destroy him.

37. This is indeed a hard and fe-But when things do come vere Trial. to this extremity, that a Man must either lose the friendship of his dearest Relations, or forfake his Religion; all earthly and temporal Confiderations must yield to the one thing necessary, of fecuring an eternal Interest. For whoever shall prefer the Love of a Father, or Mother, or Brother, or Sifter, before true Religion and Virtue; cannot be a fincere Disciple of Christ, nor be accounted worthy to be admitted into the Kingdom of Heaven.

38. And he that cannot follow me in bearing Sufferings, Afflictions, and Death; cannot be thought worthy to

partake with me in my Glory.

39. So that the Case plainly comes He who to fave his Life in this prefent time, basely complies with wicked Men by forfaking his Religion; does most truly lose it by incurring etermal Death: But he that constantly perseveres and loses his Life in this present time, to preferve his Religion and his Virtue; does most truly save it unto eternal Happiness.

40. With these Instructions, Go ye, and preach the Gospel through all the Cities of the Fews. He that entertains you, and hears and obeys your Words, shall be esteemed as if he re-

35 For Iam come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his own houshold.

37 He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and hethatloveth fon or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 Hethat findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my fake, shall find it.

I He that receiveth you, ceiveth me; and he that receiveth

me,

# Chap. XI.

me, receiveth him that fent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

)-

1-

st

ns

of

th

er

ot

nd

or

en

hy

hat ofs, fter thy

leth it:

**feth** 

ake,

that

re-

and

veth

me,

42 And whosoever shall give to
drink unto one of
these little ones, a
cup of cold water
only, in the name of
a disciple, verily I say
unto you, he shall in
no wise lose his reward.

### St. MATTHEW.

ceived me: And he that receives me, fhall be accepted as if he had heard and obeyed the Words of God himfelf.

AI. He that receives a Preacher of Righteousness, merely upon the account of his bearing that Character; without any temporal Consideration; and shall entertain, and encourage, and assist him; shall be look'd upon to have an Interest both in his Work and in his Reward. And he that shall entertain a righteous Man, merely upon the account of his being a righteous Man, without any other Consideration; shall be entitled to a Share of his Reward.

42. And whosoever shall do any the simallest Kindness, or give any the least Assistance, to the meanest of my Disciples, merely upon account of his being a Disciple, without any worldly Considerations; Assuredly I tell you, he shall by no means go unrewarded.

#### CHAP. XI.

Christ's Answer to John the Baptist's Question, who he was, ver. 1. Christ's Testimony of John the Baptist, ver. 7. The fews perverseness in judging of John and Christ, ver. 16. Christ's upbraiding the fewish Cities for their Impenitence, ver. 20. The Wisdom of God in revealing the Gospel to the Simple, ver. 25. Christ's Invitation of Sinners to embrace the Gospel, ver. 27.

A ND it came to pass when Jesus had made an end of commanding his

1. WHEN Jesus had thus instructed his Apostles, and sent them forth to preach the Gospel; he departed, and travelled himself through many Cities

Cities of the Jews, teaching and inflructing the People, and confirming his Doctrine with Signs and Miracles.

2. The Report of which Miracles ipreading over all the Country, came also at length to the Ears of John the Baptist, whom Herod for his freedom in reproving his Faults, had shut up in Prison: But his Disciples were admitted to come to him in the Prison, and they acquainted him with the Fame of Jesus's Miracles. Whereupon John sent two of them to Jesus:

3. And bad them \* ask him, Whether He were indeed the expected Meffias, or whether they should look for

another.

4. Jesus, upon their asking this Question, worked immediately several Miracles before their Face, and then bid them judge what he was by his Works; Go, saith he, and tell John what things ye have not only heard, but also seen with your Eyes.

5. Tell him that the Blind receive their Sight; that the Lame walk; that the Leprous Persons are cleansed; that the Deaf hear; that the Dead are raised; and that poor, and meek, and humble Men, have the glad Tidings of Salvation preached unto them.

6. And bleffed is he, who foever shall not † be ashamed of my Doctrine, or † discouraged by any temporal Evils

from obeying it.

twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 Now when John had heard in the prifon the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And faid unto him, Artthou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

5 The blind receive their fight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleanfed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And bleffed is he whofoever shall not be offended in

me.

+ Thus the word σαωδαλίζεωθαι fignifies in other places; and most evidently, Matt. 13. 21.

7 ¶ And

<sup>\* &#</sup>x27;Tis probable John did this, not so much that he doubted himself of Christ's being the Messias, but to satisfie his Disciples, who it seems had some small æmulation against Jesus and his Disciples; as may be gathered from Matt. 9. 14.

I,

he

to

ich

hn

ori-

of

Wo

into

that

· do

her?

ered

em,

Ohn

ings

hear

re-

, and

the

nfed,

r,the

up,

ched

ed is

fhall

ed in

oubt-

Dif-

Fesus

; and

And

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jefus began to fay unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the Wildernesstofee? A reed shaken with the wind?

8 But what went ye out for to fee? A man cloathed in foft raiment? behold, they that wear foft clothing; are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to fee? A prophet? yea, I fay unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, Behold, I fend my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

to you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater then he.

12 And from the days of John the Baptist, until Now, the kingdom

#### St. MATTHEW.

7. ¶ With this Answer the Disciples returned to John. And when they were gone, Jesus took occasion to speak to the People concerning John; and he said, What was it that ye went out into the Wilderness unto John to see? I presume it was not for nothing, and in mere trisling, that ye went out in such Multitudes.

8. What was it then, that ye went out to see? Was it in expectation of seeing some great Person, finely clothed, and appearing in great delicacy and splendor? No; The Wilderness was not a proper place, to expect such a Sight as that in.

9. What then was it, that ye went out to fee? Was it in hopes to fee a Prophet? Yea verily, and a Prophet it was that ye did fee, and a much greater one too, than any of the Prophets that went before him.

10. For this was he, of whom the Prophet *Malachi* foretold, that he should be sent as a Fore-runner, to make ready the Way for the coming of the

Messias, and to prepare Mens Hearts for the Reception of the Gospel.

11. Affuredly I tell you, that of all the Prophets and holy Men, that ever yet appeared upon the Face of the Earth, there never was any equal to John the Baptist; nevertheless, the meanest Preacher of the Gospel in the Kingdom of the Messiah, has a greater and more excellent Office and Ministry than he.

12. Twas John the Baptist that first declared openly the coming of the Messiah, and preached publickly God's Design of accepting Repentance as the Condition of the Gospel-Salvation:

And

(

di

fa

di

gl

W

n

di

h

ti

tl

C

if

W

y

tl

to

a

0

f

(

2

And from that time forwards all forts of People, not only Jews but even Gentiles also, and Publicans, and the greatest Sinners, have pressed in to hear this gracious Doctrine, and to accept the Terms of Repentance and Forgiveness.

13. For till the time of John, Men had only the Guidance and Direction of the Law and the Prophets; but fince that time, the Gospel hath been begun to be published to the World.

14. And if ye will bear that I should tell you the Truth, this John is the Person whom the Prophets foretold should appear in the Power and Spirit of Elias, to prepare the Way for the coming of the Messiah.

15. Whoever is defirous or willing to be taught and inftructed, let him obferve what I fay.

16. But the Men of this Generation are perverse and obstinate; and whatever we say or do, they will be sure to interpret crossly and perversely. No Arguments can persuade them to hearken to Instruction, and no manner of Behaviour can remove their Prejudices against us: But they are just like Children in a froward and peevish Humour.

17. For as Children in fuch an humour, do every thing just contrary to what their Companions desire and expect; If others laugh and play, they will be sad and sullen; if others be forrowful, they will laugh and mock: Even so the Men of this Generation cannot be worked upon either by one way of Teaching or another.

18. For John the Baptist, when he came to preach to them, came solitary

of heaven fuffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets, and the law prophefied until John.

14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias which was for to come.

15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 ¶ But whereunto shall I likenthis generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows.

We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinkdrinking, and they fay, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they fay, Behold, a man gluttonous and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and finners: but wisdom is justified of her children.

til

ill

li-

to

th

im

re-

his

ke

ng

ind

fel-

ng,

nto

not

ave

ou,

la-

me

noi

nk-

20 ¶ Then began hetoupbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

chorazin, wo unto thee, Bethfaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in fackcloth and afhes.

you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, then for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto

in the Wilderness, with great Austerity and Severity of Life, with Fasting and Abstinence, with Mortification and Self-denial: And they said, he is mad, and hath a Devil.

19. On the contrary, Christ comes to them without this Austerity, in a freer way of Conversation: And they call him a loose Person, a Glutton and a Wine-drinker, and a Companion of the worst of Men. But when the perverseness of Men has said and done all that it can, Wisdom will still vindicate it self and appear to be Wisdom, in whomsoever it be found, and in what manner soever it be exercised.

20. ¶ Then began Jesus to upbraid the Cities wherein he had worked most of his Miracles, for their invincible Obstinacy and Malice; that though he had taught them such excellent Doctrine, and proved his Authority by such undeniable Miracles, yet they could not be persuaded to repent.

Inhabitants of Chorazin and Bethfaida: For if God had vouchfafed to Tyre and Sidon the fame Demonstrations of his Power, and the fame Offers of his Mercy, that he has graciously been pleased to make unto you; they might long fince have repented in all Humility.

22. Therefore I tell you, the Punishment of the Inhabitants of Tyre and Sidon, shall be more tolerable than that which shall be inflicted upon you in the Day of Vengeance: Because ye have withstood greater Convictions, and rejected the Offers of greater Mercy.

23. And thou Capernaum, which art now fo great, and flourishing, and proud a City; shalt be utterly destroyed and brought to nothing. For if

God

God had done the same wonderful things in Sodom, that he has done in thee; it might have repented, and have escaped that dreadful Vengeance which follower is

fell upon it.

24. Therefore the Overthrow of Sodom shall appear to have been more tolerable, than that dreadful Destruction which shall be inflicted on the Inhabitants of Capernaum in the Day of Vengeance.

25. ¶ After these things, Jesus prayed, and said: I return thee Thanks and Praise, O Father, the Almighty Creator and All-wise Governour of the World; for that in the infinite Wisdom of thy Divine Providence thou hast so ordered the Dispensations of thy Mercy, that the Mysteries of the Gospel and the Means of attaining eternal Happiness, are not so much understood and embraced by the cunning, politick, and proud Men of this World, as by the modest and humble and meek.

26. Most justly, O Father, hast thou fo disposed things: For thus it became infinite Goodness and Justice to do; and thus it seemed good to the eternal Wisdom of thy All-seeing Providence.

27. ¶ Jesus added moreover, and said: The whole disposal of all things relating to the Salvation of Men, is now committed to me by God the Father: And as no one understandeth the nature of this Oeconomy, but God the Father who has sent the Son into the World; so no Man can understand in what manner God the Father will be worshipped and obeyed, but the Son to whom he has committed the Discovery of his Will, and they to whom the Sonshall reveal that Discovery.

heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

24 But I fay unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, then for thee.

ar

an

ui

is

de

Th

I

on

day

cor

cip

thoi

25 ¶ At that time Jefus an fwered and faid, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even fo Father, for fo it feemed good in thy fight.

27 All things are delivered unto meof my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, fave the Son, and he to whomfoever the Son will reveal him.

### Chap. XII.

I.

to

h-

ch

in

ne

ple

itil

ito

be for

m,

dg-

iee.

me

and

ee,

of

be-

hid

the

ent, aled

Fa-

em-

ght.

are

e of

the

her:

any

fave

ne to

the

im.

come

28 ¶ Come unto meall ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you reft.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

30 For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

#### St. MATTHEW.

28. Come therefore unto me, ye that are weary of the flavery of Sin, and defirous to know how to be reconciled to God. Come unto me, ye that are weary of tedious Rites and burdenfom Ceremonies, and I will teach you the most easie and acceptable way of serving God.

and become my Disciples. I will teach and instruct you, not in the ways of Pride, Haughtiness, and Cruelty; but in Meekness, Gentleness, and Mercy. And I will change a heavy and burdensom Service, to such a reasonable Obedience, as every good Man must approve and rejoice in.

30. For my Religion is easie and good; and the Commandments of the Gospel are by no means grievous.

#### CHAP. XII.

The Disciples plucking and eating Corn on the Sabbath-day vindicated, ver. 1. A withered Hand healed, ver. 9. A blind and dumb Man healed, ver. 22. Blashhemy against the Holy Ghost, ver. 31. Hypocrisic of the Pharisees, ver. 33. Their unseasonableness in asking a Sign from Heaven, ver. 38. Obedience the chief thing respected by Christ, ver. 46.

T that time
Jefus went
on the Sabbathday through the
corn, and his difciples were an hun-

I. ABout this time it hapned that Jesus walked through the Cornfields on the Sabbath-day with his Disciples. And as they were going, the Disciples being hungry, and knowing what they were \* permitted by the Law

<sup>\*</sup> When thou comest into the standing Corn of thy neighbours, then thou maist pluck the ears with thine hand, Deut. 23. 25.

in fuch case to do, plucked the Ears of Corn, and rubbing out the Corn with

their Hands, began to eat it.

2. But the Pharifees, who watched all Occasions of reproaching them, obferving that it was the Sabbath-day when they did this, faid to Jesus; See you not how your Disciples break the Sabbath? Why do you not reprove them?

3. Jefus answered, faying; God never designed by any positive Constitutions, such as the strict fudaical observation of the Sabbath, and the like, to put such Difficulties upon Men, as to hinder them from doing things absolutely necessary. For have ye not read how David behaved himself in a like Case?

4. Do ye not remember, how when he was hungry in a Journey, the Priest (1 Sam. 21. 6.) gave him consecrated Shew-breadout of the Tabernacle, which in strictness none but the Priests were allowed to eat; and both David and they that were with him eat of it? Now if David be no where blamed for doing this, why do ye reproach my Disciples for doing so small a thing, as plucking and eating a few Ears of Corn on the Sabbath-day?

5. Again, Do you not remember how the priefts are by the Law appointed to do feveral forts of Works in the Temple upon the Sabbath-day, and yet they are no where accused for breaking the Sabbath in so doing?

6. You will fay perhaps, this was a Case excepted, because in this Case the Priests were employed in the Temple and about the Service of God, by God's own express Command. Very true; And if so, then the Business of

gred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

2 But when the Pharifees faw it, they faid unto him, Behold thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath-day.

3 But he faid unto them, Have ye not read what David did when hewas an hungred, and they that were with him. S

th

wa

he

fyn:

ther

wit

out !

on t

men

conc

have

Senf

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?

5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the fabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the fabbath, and are blameles?

6 But I fay unto you, that in this place is one greater then the temple.

9 But

of

Be-

do

ot

no

nto

not

did unthat

ntred

e of

at the

which ul for

either

were

only

ye not

, how

bbathsinthe ne the

nd are

y unto

in this

greater

ple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy and not facrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltlefs.

8 For the fon of man is Lord even of the fabbath-day.

9 And when he wasdeparted thence, he went into their synagogue.

no ¶ And behold there was a man which had his hand withered: and they

Mens Salvation, which my Disciples are going upon, and my Presence, and my Permission, will much more excuse them in this smaller Instance.

7. But besides; fince God every where declares, that he prefers Works of Righteousness and Charity, before Sacrifices and the exactest performance of all positive Laws and outward Ceremonies; ye have no reason to accuse my Disciples, for being so intent upon Works of greater importance, as not to have made provision for a strict Observation of the Sabbath in its Pharisaical and utmost Rigour.

8. Especially it being evident of the Sabbath in particular, that being instituted for the use and relief of Man, and not to be a hindrance to him in the performance of Moral Duties; it may in Cases of necessity be dispensed with by † any Man, and much more have its Rigour relaxed by † me.

9. ¶ On \* another Sabbath-day, Je-\*See Luke fus entred into the Synagogue; and then 6. 6. there offered it felf an occasion of confirming the fame Doctrine by a Miracle in the Synagogue, which he had before preached in the Fields.

10. For there happened to be in the Synagogue a Man having a withered Hand; And the Jews still watching for somewhat whereof they might

9 But

<sup>+</sup> Since on the one hand the Phrase Son of Man cannot without harshness be understood of any other than Christ; and since on the other hand some Expositors not without great Arguments (and especially from the parallel place, Mark 2, 27.) conceive it in this Passage to mean only Man in general; I have therefore endeavoured in the Paraphrase to express both Senses.

Cha

them

shoul

knov

17

be

was:

thep

ferv:

chof

in v

wel

put

him

shev

the

1

ftri

the

hea

ftre

fha

and

fha

till

jud

ton

na

tile

br

on

ed th di

al

F

15

16

accuse Jesus, observed him and † asked whether he would think it lawful to heal the Man on the Sabbath-day.

there among you so strict and scrupulous an Observer of the Sabbath, as that if but a Beast of his should by any Accident come in danger of its Life, or of any great Mischief, he would not immediately relieve it, though it were

on the Sabbath-day?

12. If then the fear of the loss of a Beast, be accounted by you a sufficient Excuse for breaking the Sabbath; how much more ought an act of Charity towards a Man, to be preferred before all ceremonious Observances? So that, even your selves being Judges, it is lawful to do Acts of Righteousness and Charity upon the Sabbathday.

13. Then Jesus bad the Man stretch out his Hand; and its Strength immediately returned to it, and it became

found as the other.

14. Upon this, the Pharifees went out; and being filled with Rage and Indignation against Jesus, they consulted among themselves how they might

destroy him.

15. But Jesus knowing their Designs, and because his Time of Suffering was not yet come, retreated from thence with his Disciples into a private Place. Nevertheless the Multitude, discovering whicher he went, followed him; and he healed all their Diseases and Insirmities.

asked him, faying, Is it lawful to heal on the fabbath-days? that they might accuse him.

nto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbathday, will he not lay hold on it, and list it out?

then is a man better then a sheep? wherefore it is lawful todo well on the sabbathdays.

13 Then faither to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth; and it wasrestored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharifees went out, and held a counfel against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when lefus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all.

<sup>+</sup> By their danovious, their mutterings one to another. Luke 6. 8.

I,

8,

eal

15?

ac-

aid

hat

be

hat

ep,

th-

lay

ftit

uch

tter

ere-

odo

ath-

h he

etch

and:

ed it

sre-

like-

the

out,

el a-

they

im.

n le-

vith-

from

great

wed

ealed

ther.

And

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

18 Behold, my fervant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my foul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 Abruifed reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, infomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were ama-

#### St. MATTHEW.

16. Yet because he was not willing to make any more Disturbance, and to enter into more Contentions with the Pharises; but desired to discharge his Office quietly, and to heal and do good to all Men without much noise; therefore he commanded the People not to make him known.

17. And thus was fulfilled that Pro-

phecy of Esaias (Isai. 42. 1.)

18. Behold, my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my Soul is well pleased. I will put my Spirit upon him; and he shall preach true Religion, not only to the People of Israel, but to the Gentiles also.

19. And this he shall do in all Meekness, Gentleness, and Humility; without Contention and Noise, without

Tumult and Disturbance.

20. He shall not with rigour and severity destroy those that are weak and fallen, but shall with mercy and gentleness recover and reform them; till by his meekness and goodness he shall cause true Rsligion to be spread triumphantly over all the World, and be established for ever.

21. Insomuch that even the Gentile World shall be converted by his Doctrine, and publickly profess his Name and Reli-

gion.

22. ¶ After this, the People brought to Jesus a Man possessed with a Devil, and so miserably afflicted, that he was deprived of the use both of his Eyes and his Tongue. And Jesus cast out the Devil, and healed the Man; and immediately he that had been blind and dumb, both spake and saw.

23. At which Miracle the People were exceedingly furprized, and faid;

F 3 Cer-

Ch

out

Spi

the

isc

car

ftre

and

exc

the

the

his

m

th

m

br

TIS

Certainly this Man must be the Messiah.

24. But the Pharifees, who were hardened against all Conviction, when they heard the People thus talk, said within themselves: No; This Man, who is a breaker of Sabbaths and a despiser of our Traditions, cannot act by Divine Power and Authority; but it must be by Confederacy with the Prince of the Devils, that he thus castethout Devils.

25. But Jesus knowing their Thoughts, faid; With what perverseness do you now reason among your selves! For whatever is done by Confederacy with evil Spirits, must be something that promotes the Interest of Evil Spirits and the cause of Wickedness, and not any thing directly contrary thereto: Unless you will imagin that any Kingdom or Society, can be supported by Quarrels and Divisions within itself.

26. If therefore casting out Devils, and that in Confirmation of a Doctrine directly contrary to the Interest of evil Spirits, be a thing not to be done by Confederacy with those Evil Spirits; then nothing can be more absurdly malicious, than this your Accusation of me

27. But besides; your own Countrymen and Relations have sometimes undertaken to cast out Devils, and yet yenever accused them of Confederacy with evil Spirits: What reason have ye then to accuse me thereof, who have never cast out Devils by any worse means, or to serve any worse purpose? So that either these your own People must condemn you of Partiality and unjust Judgment, or else ye must

zed, and faid, Isnot this the fon of David?

24 But when the Pharifees heard it, they faid, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jefus knew their thoughts, and faid unto them, Every kingdom divided against to desolation: and every city or house divided against it self, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, heis divided against himfelf; how shall then his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

IJ,

not

Da-

the

it,

low

de-

ze-

the

ew

and

E-

ivi-

ati-

city

2-

hall

tan

m-

hen

d?

by

out

do

ore

our

But

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

29 Or elfe', how can one enter into a firong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

needs acknowledge that I cast out Devils by a Divine Power.

28. And now if the thing it felf be apparent, and ye cannot without extream Unreasonableness and the utmost degree of Malice deny it, that what I do is by the immediate Power of God; then here is a convincing Proof, that I am truly sent from God, that I act by his Commission, and that the Doctrine which I preach is for the establishment of his Kingdom.

29. For as one's entring into a strong Man's House, and forcibly dispossessing him of his Goods, is an evident Proof, that he who so enters, is stronger and comes with greater Authority than he that had the first Possession: So my breaking the Power of Devils, by casting them out of the Bodies, and destroying their Dominion over the Minds of Men, is an undeniable Demonstration of my being sent by a Power and Authority greater than theirs.

30. When two great Powers are at irreconcilable Enmity against each other, even he that only forbears joyning with one fide, is thereby reputed to be against it: \* How much more therefore ought I, who have actually done so many things towards destroying the Power and Kingdom of the Devil, to be believed to act really in opposition to him? And \* he that shall not joyn with me in this great Work, shall be look'd upon to be against me.

<sup>\* \*</sup> This Verse being capable of two Senses, whereof it is not easie to determine which was principally intended by our Saviour, I have endeavoured in the Paraphrase to express both.

31. Since therefore 'tis as evident as is possible, that the Works which I do, are by the Authority of God, and by the Power of his Holy Spirit; I tell you, whosoever shall resist this Conviction, by such a degree of Malice as ascribing these Works to the Power of the Devil, God will not afford to such a Man any further Conviction; so that though all other Sins and Blasphemies whatsoever may be repented of and forgiven, yet he that shall be guilty of this, shall never have granted him any further means of Repentance and Forgiveness.

32. All other Sins, I fay, may be forgiven: Even he that speaks against me, and is not convinced by my preaching, may yet afterwards be convinced by the Power of the Holy Ghoft, and repent and be forgiven. But he that shall obstinately resist this last Means of Conviction, which God has thought fit to make use of for the Conversion of Mankind, and shall maliciously revile the most evident Operations of the Spirit of God; fuch a one has no further Means left, by which he might be convinced and brought to Repentance, and confequently he can never be forgiven.

33. In vain do ye Pharisees pretend to Holiness and Sincerity of Heart, while ye suffer your Mouths to utter such Blasphemies. For as a Tree is known by his Fruit, so a Man's Words are Signs of the Disposition of his Heart. Either therefore sorbear Blaspheming, or else pretend not to Religion at all, with which such Behaviour is utterly inconsistent,

34. But indeed it is impossible ye should speak otherwise than Evil. For

31 ¶ Wherefore I fay unto you, All manner of fin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the boly Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

h

a

0

te

r

m

th

CC

th

m

W

be

by

fn

an an

M

fee

fw

to

and

ne

ter

tha

to

the

32 And whose ver speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: butwhosever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come,

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or elfe make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit

on of vipers, how

ore

All

nd

be

en:

my

nost

ven

ofoe-

word

on of

e for-

who-

th a-

Holy

all not

m,nei-

vorld,

world

make

d, and

od; or

he tree

his truit

the tree

hisfruit

enerati

s, how

ca

can ye, being evil, fpeak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth fpeaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I fay unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judg-

ment.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ Then certain of the Scribes, and of the Pharifees answered, faying, Master, we would see a fign from thee.

39 But he anfwered and faid
to them, An evil
and adulterous generation feeketh after a fign, and there
shall no fign be given
to it, but the fign of
the prophet Jonas.

ye are a perverse and malicious Generation of Men, and the Thoughts of Mens Hearts will discover themselves by their Words.

35. A good Man, whose Thoughts and Designs are good, will utter good Things: And a wicked Man, whose Thoughts and Designs are wicked, will

utter evil Things.

36. And do not think that Mens Words are a light thing, and pass unheeded in the fight of God. I tell you there is no falsity or evil Word, that a Man speaks, so trivial, which shall not be examined and have its regard in the exactness of the Divine Judgment; how much more shall Revilings and Blasphemies be accounted for?

37. For not only by Mens Actions, but also by their Words, shall their State be determined; and Judgment accordingly be passed upon them.

38. Then some of the Jewish Doctors and Pharisees spake to Jesus, saying; Master, we are not satisfied with the Works you have yet done; we desire you would call for some miraculous Sign from Heaven, which may demonstrate you to be sent from God, and to act by his Power and Commission.

39. But Jesus knowing their Obstinacy and Malice, answered them thus. Ye are a perverse and degenerate Generation of Men: I have already wrought many and great Miracles, and ye believe me not; I have done many wonderful Works before your Faces here on Earth, and now nothing will satisfy you but a Sign from Heaven. I tell you, God will not vouchsafe any more Signs to this Generation; but only one such Sign as was that of the Prophet Jonas, to render them inexcusable.

40. For

IV

ho

I

wl

fine

nif

and

fpi

the

the

dv

th

fh

th

0

40. For as *Jonas*, after having been three Days buried in the Sea in the Belly of the Whale, was cast up again alive: So *Christ*, after he shall be killed and buried in the Earth, shall on

the third Day be raifed again.

41. And then this Generation shall, by being compared with the People of Nineveh, appear to be most justly condemned to utter Destruction. For when the Men of Nineveh were preach'd to by Jonas, who was a Stranger, and but a mean Person; who continued among them but three Days, worked no Miracles to confirm his Mission; they yet hearkned to him and repented. But this Generation, though they have Christ himself sent to preach to them; though they hear his Doctrine, and fee his Miracles; though they wonder at the Authority and Plainness with which he teaches, and are aftonished at the Power by which he acts; yet they are not by all these things brought to Repentance.

42. Again, this Generation shall, by being compared with the Queen of Sheba, appear to be most justly condemned and destroyed. For she having heard afar off the Fame of Solomon's Wisdom, took a very long Journey to go and see and admire it: But the Men of this Generation, having a Teacher of far greater Wisdom and Knowledge, offering himself to instruct them in their own Streets, yet despise and reject him.

43 & 44 & 45. I will tell you therefore by an easie Similitude, what shall be the Case of the Men of this Generation, and how they shall be dealt with. As an evil Spirit, when he is cast out of a Man, wandreth through the World, and not meeting with En-

40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly: fo shall the fon of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold a greater than Jonas is here.

42 The queen of the fouth shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 The

44 Then he faith, I will return to my housefrom whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren flood without, defiring to fpeak with him.

47 Then one faid unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he anfwered and faid unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And hestretched forth his hand towards his distertainment elsewhere, returns to the fame Man again; and if he finds him disposed and fitted to receive him, enters into him again, and brings also many other evil Spirits with him; fo that the state of that Man becomes ten times worse than it was at first: Even fo shall it be with the Men of this Generation. Ignorance, Superstition, and Malice, like to many evil Spirits, have by the preaching of the Gospel been beginning to be in some measure dispelled from amongst them; but meeting with less Entertainment even in the Heathen World than among the Fews, and finding the Hearts of these Men Itill prepared to receive and entertain them, they return into them again, and filling them with more incurable Wickedness and Impenitence than ever, fit them for a most dreadful and exemplary Destruction.

46. ¶ While Jesus was discoursing these things, his Mother and some other of his nearest Relations, hoping (as it should seem) to draw him away from the Dangers which he exposed himself to, came and desired to speak to him.

47. But not being able to get near him for the Crowd of People, one that flood nigh told him, that his Mother and other Relations waited to speak to him.

48. But Jesus answered him and faid; Who are they, whom ye call my Mother and Brethren? Do ye think that I esteem of People by nearness of Blood, by any earthly Relation or Affections?

49. And pointing towards his Difciples, he added, and faid; No: But these

these are they, whom ye ought more

properly to call my Relations.
50. For whoever shall hear the Word of God, and believe and embrace and obey it; these are the Persons, whom I look upon as my truest Friends and

Relations, and efteem them as my Mother and Brethren and Sifters.

Chap. XIII.

ciples, and faid, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

#### CHAP. XIII.

The Parable of the Sower, ver. 1. Why Christ spake in Parables, ver. 10. Parable of the Tares, ver. 24. Of the Mustard-Seed, ver. 31. Of the Leaven, ver. 33. The Explication of these Parables, ver. 19. and 34. Parable of the hidden Treasure, ver. 44. Of the Pearl, ver. 45. Of the Fishing-Net, ver. 47. The Use and Application of them to the Disciples, ver, 51. Christ despised in his own Country, ver. 53.

ABOUT this time, Jesus being teaching in the House, and finding that he wanted room, went out to the side of the Lake, and there he sat and taught the People.

2. And when the Multitude of People, that came together to hear him, grew fo great that they pressed one another, he went into a Boat that he might be the more conveniently seen and heard, and the People stood upon the Shore before him.

3. And because there were but few among them, that were able to comprehend, or prepared and worthy to hear the whole Truth fully declared to them, therefore he instilled things into them

HE fameday went Jesus out of the house, and fat by the sea side

fov

fell

fide

car ed

Of

W

m

to

fp

th

fi

b

n

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, fo that he went into a ship, and sate, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow.

4 And

0-

a-

be

The

ble

45.

10n

bis

day

fus

ife,

fea

ıul-

ga-

un-

he

hip,

the

ude

re.

ake

nto

oles,

a

orth

And

by degrees, and taught them by the way of Comparisons or Simili-And first he compared the preaching of the Gospel, to a Husbandman's fowing Corn in his Field; to show them, that as the fame Seed produced better or worse Corn, according as it was fown in better or worfe Ground; so the preaching of the Doctrine of Christianity had more or less effect upon the Lives of Men, according as it was heard and received by Men of honest and well-disposed Hearts, or by those of an evil and contrary Difposition. A Husband-man, saith he, went out to fow his Ground: Thus the Preacher of the Gospel scattereth his Instructions, and as it were fows the Precepts of true Religion, in the Hearts of his Hearers.

4 And when he fowed, fome feeds fell by the ways fide, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

4. And while he was fowing, fome of the Seed fell upon the beaten Road, and never entring at all into the Ground, was pick'd up by the Birds. Thus the Doctrine of the Gospel is heard by some, who never consider and meditate upon it at all; but as they heard it carelesly and without regard, so the next trivial business that either the Devil or the World puts into their Thoughts, causes them immediately to forget it.

on stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnels of earth:

5 & 6. Again, some other of the Seed fell upon rocky Ground, where the Earth being very shallow, it sprung up indeed quickly; but having no depth of Root, as soon as the Sun shone hot, it withered away: Thus some others hear the Doctrine of Christianity, who receive it indeed, and consider it also, and make Resolutions to obey it; but not having a settled firmness and constancy of Mind, they are overcome

6 And when the fun was up, they were fcorched; and because they had not root, they withered away.

ve

fha

he

abı

W

no be

ve:

fpe

th

no

th

th

de

is

ph

W

he

he

ur

an

ce

ec

E

ey

ti

fe

21

ea

tl

1

e

by Temptations, especially in Persecution, and fall away from God.

fell among Weeds and Thorns, which forung up with the Corn, and overgrew it, and killed it: Thus the preaching of the Gospel is heard by others, who also receive it and entertain it; but their Minds are so taken up with the Covetousness, Cares, and Pleasures of the World, that it hath little or no Effect upon their Lives and Conversations.

8. Lastly, Some other of the Seed fell into good Ground, which brought forth Corn proportionally to the goodness of the Soil, some more plentifully, some less: Thus some others hear the Doctrine of true Religion; who being of good and honest and well-disposed Tempers, believe, embrace and obey it, and show the Effects of it in the Holiness of their Lives; according to the different degrees of the goodness of their Tempers, and of the sirmness of their Resolutions, making smaller or greater Improvements in Virtue.

He that is capable and defirous of being instructed, let him attend and

observe what I say.

10. This Parable of the Sower fesus spake unto the People, without applying or giving the Explication of it. And when he was alone, his Disciples asked him, why he taught the People only by way of Similitudes, without giving them the Explication.

you indeed may have all the Truths, that concern the State of the Gospel and the Kingdom of the Messiah, clearly and fully explained to you, yet the

7 And fome fell among thorns: and the thorns fprung up and choaked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, fome an hundred fold, fome fixty fold, fome thirty fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

ro ¶ And the disciples came and faid unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 For

# Chap. XIII.

12 For whofoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath.

Therefore fpeak I to them in parables: because they feeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Efaias; which faith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and feeing ye shall fee, and shall not perceive.

n

e

e

d

1,

u

1-

.

it

u

ſ-

15

ď

15 For this peoples heart is waxed gross, and their Ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have clolest at any time they should fee with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and fhould understand with their hearts, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

### St. MATTHEW.

mixt Multitude are not capable nor worthy of fuch a thing.

12. For they who with honesty and, fimplicity receive Instruction; and improve those Advantages, which God hath already given them, to the purposes of Religion and the increase of Virtue, as you do: Such Persons indeed shall have \* more Instruction and greater Affiftances, continually afforded them. But they who make no use of that Instruction which is given them, and improve not those Advantages which they already have; as a great part of these common Hearers do not: Such Persons, as they are not capable, to neither shall they be accounted worthy of more Instruction or greater Advantages.

13. Therefore I fpeak to them in Parables; that because by seeing the greatest Miracles they have not been convinced, and by hearing the plainest Doctrines they would not be made to understand, all those may yet continue Ignorant, who will not take pains to consider and search out the Truth.

14. And thus in these People is most exactly fulfilled that Prophecy of E-saias; (Isai. 6. 9.) Ye hear indeed, but understand not: and ye see indeed, but perceive not:

15. For the Heart of this People is fat, and their Ears heavy, and their Eyes shut; so that they see not with their Eyes, nor hear with their Ears, nor understand with their Heart, to be converted and healed.

### A Paraphrase on

16. But as for you my Disciples, blessed are ye; because year econvinced by what you see, and are desirous to understand what you hear: Therefore has God thought fit to reveal to you the whole Truth, and to make known to you the Mysteries of his Kingdom.

17. And what a great Blessing indeed this is, ye may judge from hence; that the Patriarchs and Prophets and holy Men of old, were desirous to see and hear those things which ye now see and hear, but were not permitted. To them God vouchfased to foreshow these things only in Shadows and afar off, which to you he now reveals clearly and plainly.

18. You therefore may hear the full Sense and Explication of the Parable.

19. Then He told them, how by the Sower was to be understood the Preacher of the Gospel; and by the Seed the Doctrine of true Religion. That by that sown in the common Road, were meant those who heard this Doctrine, but regarded it not, neither remembred it at all.

20, & 21. That by that sown in shallow Earth upon a Rock, were meant those who heard indeed the preaching of the Gospel, and gladly received it also, and made Resolutions to obey it; but for want of Constancy and Firmness in those Resolutions, in time of

## Chap. XIII.

C

of

by.

rec

the

hea

an

W

cei

cho

he

fru

cei

go

tha

WC ftan

alfo

for

fol

thi

rab

un

Th

he

to

ed

fie

me

m

tar

w

W

bla

an

fru

th

of

Ca

are your eyes, for they fee: and your ears, for they hear,

17 For verily I fay unto you, that many prophets, and righteous men have defired to those things which ye fee, and have not them: and hear those things which ye hear, have and heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the fower.

When any 19 heareth the one word of the king. dom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which Was fowed in his heart: this is he which received feed by the way fide.

20 But he that received the feed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himfelf, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or perfecution arifeth because II.

Ted

for

TUC

ar.

I

hat

S,

nen

to

ind

een

to

ar,

ot

ye

02-

ny

the

ng.

er-

ot,

he

ind

ray

vas

rt:

ich

by

ed

es,

at

rd,

oy

m-

th

10

011

on

le

of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that received feed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it: which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundred fold, some fixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, faying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which fowed good feed in his field;

25 But while men flept, his enemy came and fowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was fprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the taresalfo.

27 So the fervants of the housholder came, and faid unto Temptation and Persecution fell away.

22. That by that sown among Weeds and Thorns, were meant those who also heard and received the Doctrine of Christianity; but through the Cares and Covetousness and vain Pleasures of the World, made no Improvements in Religion and Virtue.

23. And lastly, That by that fown in good Ground, were meant those who heard the Doctrine of true Religion, and understood, and practised it; and became in their several degrees truly and sincerely Religious.

24. ¶ But to return to the History. Jesus spake also another Parable to the People, and said: A certain Husbandman sowed good Seed in his Ground: Thus Christ sendeth forth good Men into the World, to constitute his Church, and to grow up together in one Body in Holiness and Righteousness.

25. But while his Servants slept, an Enemy came, and sowed Tares among the Wheat, and went away. Thus while the Servants of Christ are less watchful than they ought, the Devil sends among them salse Apostles and salse Teachers, and wicked Men; who for some time lie hid under the veil of Hypocrisie, infinuating themselves into weak Men by specious salse Doctrines.

26. But when the Corn grew up, and bore fruit, then the Tares also discovered themselves. Thus in process of time, when Trials and Persecutions come on, and good Men distinguish themselves by the fruits of Patience and Virtue; then the Hypocrites also discover themselves, by their indirect Practises, or open deserting the Truth.

27 & 28. Then some of the Hus-G bandman's

con

tha

air

the

rab

the

to ]

WO

int

me

wa

**Ipa** 

mu

ble

un

be

Wa

pro

Wi

in utt

ha

fro

of

fer

av

th

di

hi

cla

ra

th

H

g

0

bandman's Servants came to kim and told him, that Tares were grown up among his Wheat, and asked him if they should go and weed them out: Thus good and well meaning Persons, when they see Hypocrites and evil Men in the Church, wish that they could all be cast out, and that the Church might consist only of sincere Members.

29 & 30 But the Husbandman answered, No; Lest while ye are weeding out the Tares, ye pluck up also the Wheat with them; But let them alone till Harvest, and then I will order my Reapers to pick out the Tares first and burn them, and then gather the Wheat into my Barn: Thus God has not made Provision to have all forts of evil Men cast out of the Church, least weak and good Men should suffer with them; neither doth he always in this World fend publick Judgments upon the Wicked, lest the Innocent be involved in the Calamity together: But at the end of the World, he will by his Angels separate the good and fincere Men from the Wicked and the Hypocrites; and then he will exactly reward the one, and punish the other.

fpake Jesus to the People, and said; A Husbandman sowed in his Field a grain of Mustard-seed; which when it was sown, was one of the least of Seeds; but when it grew up, it became a spreading Tree, his enough for the Birds to build their Nests in its Boughs: Thus the Gospel of Christ at its first appearing, seems mean and contemptible, received only by a few, and those mean Persons: But in time it shall spread over all the Earth; And That Doctrine

him, Sir, didft not thou fow good feed in thy field? from whence then hathit tares?

28 He faith unto them, An enemy hath donethis. The fervants faid unto him, Wiltthouthen that we go and gather them up?

29 But he faid, Nay: left while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

grain of mustardteed, which a man took and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh

cometh a tree: fo that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

d

n

it

y

to

en

2-

W

he

I

0-

es, in

rn

er

ny

er

rth

ng,

ot

1

rd-

an

in

eed

ds:

m,

2-

be-

eth

33 ¶ Another parable fpake he unto them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a womantook and hid inthree measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 Allthesethings fpake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I willopen my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them. He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man:

which the *Jews* now despise and reject, shall be embraced and flourish among all the Nations of the *Gentiles*.

33. ¶ Also he spake another Parable to the same import, saying; A Woman took a little Leaven, and covered it up in three Bushels of Meal; and when it had lain there a while, the whole had received the tincture of the Leaven throughout: Thus the Religion of Christ, which now begins to be taught amongst Men, shall by the Power and Evidence of Truth, spread it self in time through all the Nations of the World.

34. ¶ All these Parables did Jesus speak to the People, telling them the bare Similitude only, without adding the Explication.

35. So that hereby he literally fulfilled that Saying of the Prophet, Pfalm 78. 2. I will open my mouth in Parables; I will utter dark Sayings of old.

36. But when the Multitude were difmissed, he entred into a House with his Disciples; and there they desired him to explain to them what was meant by the Parable of the Tares springing up among the Wheat.

37. And then he told them, how by the Husband-man was meant Christ, or any other Preacher of the Gospel un-

der him.

G 2 38. That

38. That by the Field, was to he understood the World; by the good Seed sown in the Ground, good Christians, or true and sincere Members of the Church of Christ; and by Tares springing up among the Wheat, wicked Men and Hypocrites crept into the Church.

39. That by the *Enemy* who fowed the Tares, was meant the *Devil*; by the *Harvest*, the *Day of Judgment*; and by

the Reapers, the Angels of God.

40. Lastly, That as in the time of Harvest the Tares were pickt out from among the Wheat, and east into the Fire and burnt:

ment, Christ should send out his Angels; and they should separate all wicked Men and Hypocrites, and false Teachers, and impenitent Sinners, from among good and sincere Men; and should cast them into Hell, the place of the execution of God's sinal Vengeance, where they should be tormented for ever with fruitless Repentance and never-ceasing Woe.

43. And then, added he, shall the righteous be crowned with immortal Glory; and shall enjoy unspeakable Happiness in the presence of God. Whoever is capable and desirous to be instructed, let him observe what I say.

44. ¶ Jesus added moreover another Parable, and said; As a Man that findeth a great Treasure in the Field, goeth with much joy, and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that Field: So true Religion and Piety is such a Treasure, for the attainment of which a Man ought to be willing to part with all things in the World.

# Chap. XIII,

Ch

king is lil

chan

g000

had

of g

wer

he h

it.

kin

is li

caft

kin

it v

to

do

the

Wa

at

W

fh

an

fre

ju

th

112

11

g

t

t

1

38 The field is the world: the good feed are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wick. ed one:

39 The enemy that fowed them, is the devil. The harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: fo shall it be in the endos this world.

41 The fon of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity?

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of sire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hathfound, hehideth, and for joy thereof, goeth and felleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 Again,

## Chap. XIII.

I,

13

bo

en

13

19

11-

he

1-

re

T-

he

in

ld.

of

tà

ey

of

all

ıd,

do

aft

ice

all

sh-

he

th

he

eir

th

im

he

en

ire

he

211

th,

of,

th

nd

in,

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man, feeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and fold all that he had, and bought

47 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind.

48 Which when it wasfull, they drew to shore, and fat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? they say unto him, Yea, LORD.

52 Then faid he unto them, There-

### St. MATTHEW.

45 & 46. ¶ Again, As a Manthat trades in Pearls, when he meets with one of exceeding great value, readily fells all the rest that he has, to buy that: So the Virtue and Happiness of the Gospel is a Jewel of such Price, that whoever really searches after his chief Good, ought to be willing to quit all earthly Enjoyments, rather than come short of this.

47 & 48. ¶ Again: As a Net cast into the Sea, catcheth all sorts of Fish, good and bad together; but when it is drawn to the shoar, then the Fishermen separate them, and preserve the good, and cast away the bad:

49 & 50. So by the Preaching of the Gospel there is gathered together a visible Church upon Earth, consisting both of good and bad Men, sincere Christians and Hypocrites together; But at the end of the World, God shall by the Ministry of his Angels separate the Good from the Evil; and then the one shall be rewarded with eternal Life, and the other punished with everlasting Destruction.

51. ¶ When Jesus had finished these Parables, he asked his Disciples; Do ye understand all these things that I have taught you? They answered; Yes, Lord.

52. Then he faid; Ye must take care therefore so to lay up these my Doctrines in your Minds, that ye may be throughly qualified to be Preachers of the Gospel, and be able upon all Occasions to bring forth out of your Memory, as out of a well-furnished Store-house, Instructions suited to Persons of all Capacities.

wor

cauf

lief.

He

t

1

1

1

etr

The

his

15

hei

dea

mi

fely

had

0

hir

in

as: Ph

un

lav

ha

to

53 & 54. ¶ After this, Jesus departed and returned into his own Country; and there he preached in their Synagogues with so much Wisdom and Authority, that those who knew the meanness of his Family and the poorness of his Parents, were astonished and said, How comes this Man by all this Knowledge and Power?

55 & 56. Is not his Father a Carpenter? And do we not know his Mother and all his Relations? plain and mean Perfons? People of no Learning, Power or Authority? How then comes this Man to pretend to fuch Wisdom,

and to do fuch mighty Works?

57. Thus they despised and slighted him for the meanness of his Parentage, and rejected his Doctrine out of prejudice to his Person. But Jesus upbraided them for these unreasonable Prejudi-A Prophet is no where ces, faying: likely to be undervalued and difrespected, so much as among his own Countrymen and by his mearest Relations. For these Men judging of things only by temporal Confiderations, and defpifing a Man's former meanners, and envying his present Honour, are therefore apt to reject him and disbelieve his Doctrine; But Strangers, acknowledging the Divine Power by which a Prophet acts, and admiring the excellency of the Doctrine which he preaches, will receive him and honour and believe him.

58. For this reason Jesus wrought but few Miracles in his own Country: Because there, Men by their unreasonable Prejudices and Unbelief, were become uncapable of being benefited by his Divine Doctrine, and unworthy of

fore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth forth out of histreasurethings new and old.

53 ¶ Anditcame to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parted thence.

54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their fynagogue, infomuchthat they were aftonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

55 Is not this the carpenters fon? is not his mother called Mary, and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his fifters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

58 And he did not many mighty

works

XIII.

fcribe .

ructed

ngdom is like at isan Which

th out things

it came

when finished

, hede.

hen he nto his

y, he

in their

info-

y were

nd faid,

h this

isdom,

mighty

histhe

n? is

ner cal-

nd his

es, and

Simon,

fisters,

ll with

e then

an all

y were

m. But

othem,

is not

onour,

own

in his

ne did

nighty

Svorks

works there, because of their unbelief.

being convinced by any greater Miracles.

#### CHAP. XIV.

Herod's Opinion of Christ; and the History of John Baptist's Death, ver. 1. Five thousand Men fed with five Loaves and two Fishes, ver. 13. Christ and Peter's walking upon the Sea, ver. 22. Many Sick healed at Gennefaret, ver. 29.

T that time A Herod the etrarch heard of he fame of Jesus.

2 And faid unto his fervants, This is John the Baptist, heis risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do flew forth themselves in him.

3 For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias take, his brother Philips wife.

4 For John faid unto him, It is not lawful for thee to

have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared

I. **D** Y this time the Fame of Jefus's D Doctrine and Miracles, had reached the Ears of Herod, who was Governour of Galilee, and Son of that Herod who had flain the Children in Bethlehem.

2. And when he heard of Jesus, and how People talked variously concerning him, some judging that he was Elias, others that he was Jeremias, and others otherwise; Herod himself said, furely this is John the Baptist, whom I beheaded; he is rifen again from the dead, and therefore these wonderful Works are wrought by him.

3 & 4. For this Herod had apprehended Fohn the Baptist, and put him in Prison, and beheaded him there; and the Occasion of his doing it, was this: Being defirous to marry Herodias his Brother Philip's Wife, John had freely told him that it was not lawful for him

to have her.

5. Hereupon he grew very angry with John, infomuch that he almost resolved to have killed him. But the perfuafion which he had in his own Con-

G 4

science concerning John's Holiness, and the fear which he had left the People (who all believed Fohn to be a Prophet) should be enraged at his Death and fall into an Uproar, restrained him from

doing it.

6 & 7. Thus John, though he was cast in Prison, had yet his Life preserved. But on a certain time, when Herod was feafting upon his Birth-day with the Court, it happened that the Daughter of Herodias dancing before him pleased him so extremely, that he fwore rashly he would give her whatever she desired, though it should cost

him even half his Kingdom.

8. And hence arose the occasion of John's death. For the young Woman not knowing what was fittest for her to defire of the King, went to her Mother Herodias to ask her Advice; who finding that she had now a fair Opportunity of executing her Revenge upon John, for having opposed her Marriage with Herod; bad her Daughter defire of the King, that John might be flain. - Accordingly the young Woman comes in and defires, that he would make her a Present of John Baptist's Head.

o. At this Request the King was furprized and greatly troubled; For the Opinion which he himself had of *Folon*, and which he knew that the People also had concerning him, did yet restrain his Passion and Cruelty. However, because he had solemnly sworn to her, and that in the prefence of his whole Court,

he resolved at last to gratifie her.

10 & 11. Sending therefore to the Prison, he caused John to be beheaded; and the Head was brought, and prefented to the young Woman; and the carried it to her Mother.

the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

cij

u

rie

to

6 But when Herod's birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatfoever

would ask.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, faid, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was forry: nevertheless for the oaths fake, and them which fat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he fent and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damfel: and the brought it to her mother.

12 And

### Chap. XIV.

12 And his Difciples came, and took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jefus.

13 ¶ When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place, apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

15 ¶ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, faying, This is a desert place, and thetime is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.

17 And they fay unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

#### St. MATTHEW.

of John, hearing of his death, went and fetched away his Body and buried it; and when they had so done, they came and gave Jesus an Account of the

whole Story.

13. ¶ When Jesus heard this, he departed from the place where he was, and went by Water into a Desart privately with his Disciples. But it was not now possible for him to hide himfelf from the diligent Enquiry of the People: For they sought him out, and being neither discouraged with the difficulty of the Way, nor with the want of Provisions in the Desart, went round about after him on foot.

14. Jefus therefore feeing a great Multitude gathered together after him, and being pleafed with their Faith and Diligence, took pity on them, and healed as many as were weak and fickly a-

mong them.

15. But when the Evening drew near, his Disciples (not yet sufficiently instructed by all the Miracles they had seen, to have a right understanding of Jesus's Power and Wisdom,) began to put him in mind, that the place being Desart and the Night approaching, it was time to send away the People, that they might go into the neighbouring Towns, and buy themselves Provisions.

16. But Jesus, knowing his own Divine Power, and resolving to work a Miracle for the benefit of those People, said; Nay, it is not necessary nor convenient to send them away thus fasting: But do ye entertain them here in this place.

17. They faid unto him, we have no Provision for so great a number of Peo-

ple

ple: Nay, we have no more amongst us in all, than five Loaves of Bread and two small Fishes.

18. Jefus, wondring at the flowness of their Understanding, that they should not yet call to mind his former Miracles, and consider what he was able to do; bad them bring to him what Victuals they had, how little soever it might be.

19. Then commanding the people to fit down in feveral Companies upon the Ground, he took the Bread and Fish in his Hands; and when he had given Thanks to God and bleffed them, he brake and gave them to his Disciples, and the Disciples distributed them to the Multitude.

of the People that did eat, was not less than Five thousand Men besides Women and Children, yet such was the efficacy of the Divine Power evidenced in the wonderful increase of the Bread and Fish upon Christ's giving his Blessing, that not only all this Multitude had enough and were satisfied, but there remained moreover as many Fragments, as, when they were gathered up, filled twelve Bread-baskets.

22. ¶ When this was done, Jesus ordered his Disciples to go into a Boat; and though they were very unwilling to go without him, yet he intending to try them with another Miraracle, commanded them to row over the Lake before-hand, and leave him behind to dismiss the People.

23. Accordingly, when the Disciples were gone, he sent away the Multitude; and after that, he went up to pray upon a Hill, and there continued alone till Night.

18 He faid, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to fit down on the grafs, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.

f

d

21 And they that had eatenwere about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had fent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But

### Chap. XIV.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, toffed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the fea,

26 And when the Disciples saw him walking on the fea, they were troubled, faying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, faying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter anfwered him and faid, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

S

t

29 And he faid, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the fhip, he walked on the water, to go to Jefus.

#### St. MATTHEW.

24. During which time, the Disciples were gotten into the midft of the Lake; where, the Wind coming contrary, and a Storm arifing, they were toffed up and down by the Waves, not without fear of being loft; Jesus suffering them to be alone in this Danger, that he might inure them to Hardships, and teach them to rely without distrust in the greatest Extremities upon the Providence of God.

25. However, when they had toiled the greatest part of the Night, Jesus took pity on them; and knowing in his Wisdom when they had been sufficiently tried by this Danger, he came to them towards Morning, walking up-

on the Lake.

26. But when the Disciples saw him walking upon the Water, and had not yet Light enough to know who he was, they were affrighted, thinking him to be a Spirit or Apparition; and not knowing what to do, they cried out for

27. But Jesus, not willing to keep them any longer in a Fright, spoke to them, and told them who he was, and bad them take Courage, and not be

afraid.

28. Then, knowing his Voice, they began to come to themselves: And Peter, who was forwardest upon all Occations to make proof of his Faith, faid; Lord, if it be you, give me leave to come out, and walk upon the Water with you.

29. Jesus, knowing the Infirmity of his too forward Confidence, and being willing to take occasion at the same time to reprove his Weakness and to confirm his Faith, bad him come down out of the Boat; and he came down

to ga

m

W

ly

T

an

W

ru:

di

gr

of

the

ha

cal

fu

un

do

gr

and walked upon the Water towards Jefus.

30. But when he felt the Wind ftrong, and faw the Waves rage and beat about him, his Faith failed, and he was afraid; and beginning to fink, he cried out, Lord, help me, I perish.

31. Then Jesus took him by the Hand, and helped him up, and reproved his Diffidence, faying; Wherefore were you fo weak, that after you had not only feen me walk upon the Water, but had also experimented my Power in doing the same your self; yet at the boisterousness of the Winds and Waves you should let your Faith fail, and fuffer Distrust to arise in your Mind?

32. Then they went Both up into the Boat together, and immediately the Storm ceased; and the Air became calm,

and the Waters smooth.

33. And when the Men of the Boat faw this great Miracle, they fell down at Jesus's Feet, and worshipped him, faying; verily you are the true Messias, the Son of God, the Redeemer of Ifrael.

34. Now when they had croffed the Lake, they came into the Land of Gennefaret, where Jesus had been once be-

fore.

35. And the Men of that Country knowing him again, fent prefently into all the Towns round about, and brought unto him all that were afflicted

with any manner of Difeafe.

36. And being convinced of his Power by his former Miracles which they had feen and heard of, they defired that they might but touch so much as the Hem of his Garment: and, according to their Faith, as many as

20 But when he faw the wind boistrous, he was afraid: and beginning to fink, he cried out, faying, Lord, fave me.

31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and faid unto him, O thou of little faith, wheredidft thou fore doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, wind ceased.

23 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, faying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennefaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they fent out into all that country round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,

be-36 And fought him, that they might only touch

touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole. touched him, with a firm Trust and Belief of his Power, were perfectly healed.

#### CHAP. XV.

The Pharisees Hypocrify and vain Traditions reproved, and the true Notion of Cleanness stated, ver. 1. The Woman of Canaan's Daughter healed, ver. 21. Many others cured in Galilee, and four thousand fed with seven Loaves and a few Fishes, ver. 29.

Hen came to I Jefus Scribes and Pharifees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they cat bread.

3 But he anfwered and faid unto them, Why do you also transgress the comI. A BOUT this time certain Jewish Doctors, Scribes and Pharisees, Inhabitants of Jerusalem, strict
Observers of the traditional Precepts of
the Elders, came to Jesus; and because
they could not find any means to accuse
him of transgressing the Law of God,
they charged him with neglecting their
Humane Traditions, saying:

2. If you pretend to be a Teacher of greater Holiness than ordinary, why do you suffer your Disciples to transgress those Precepts and Traditions, which our wise Ancestors have commanded to be observed as Fences of the Law? For Example: Whereas our Elders have ordained, that for fear of any defilement that may have happened to them, Men should always wash their Hands before Meat; your Disciples wholly neglect this Tradition, and make no scruple to eat with unwashed Hands.

3. Jefus answered: Ye are most unreasonably and maliciously partial. For, who are most justly to be blamed? My Disciples, who neglect indeed your trifling and tedious Superstitions, but strictly observe the Law of God? Or ye your felves, who, that ye may superstitiously observe the vain and sometimes directly wicked Traditions of Men, flick not at all at transgressing the eter-

nal Commands of God?

4. For Instance: 'Tis an eternal and unchangeable Law of God, that Men should Honour and Respect their Parents; that they should Obey and Submit to them; and that, when need requires, they should Relieve and Assist them. And this Law God hath moreover confirmed, by politively annexing a capital Punishment to the breach of it; that whoever Dissonours, Reviles, Disobeys, or Rebels against his Parents, + should Die without mercy.

† Deut. 21. 21.

5 6. But ye on the contrary fay: If a Man binds himself by an Oath, that he will not relieve the Necessities of his Parents; or Vows to give to fome pious Use, what should otherwise have been laid out for their Relief and Affistance; the Man is by this means freed from all Obligation of Duty to Thus in observing your his Parents. vain and superstitious Precepts or Traditions, ye openly violate the plain Commandments of God.

7. Ye Hypocrites; most justly may I now fay of you, what Esaias in old time said of your Fathers; (Isai. 29.

13.)

- This People talks of Religion, and makes an outward show of Holiness and Devotion; but their Hearts are far from being bonest and sin-
- 9. In vain therefore are all their pretences to Piety, and of no esteem in the fight of God; whilft instead of Obe-

mandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, faying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curfeth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye fay, Whofoever shall fay to his father or his mother, It is a gift by whatfoever thou mightest be profited by me,

6. And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradi-

tion.

7 Ye hypocrites, welldid Efaias prophelie of you, faying,

This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship

docti mad 1 led and Hea

I

me.

whi the mar whi of t defi

1 difc unte tho fees afte fayi

ed a plan ven not roo

lone

ner

me, teaching for doctrines the commadments of men.

to ¶ And he called the multitude, and faid unto them, Hearand understand.

which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But heanfwered and faid, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

e

0

r

r

n

14 Let them alone: they be dience to the Divine Commands, they insist only upon the Doctrines and Traditions of Men.

10. Then Jesus calling to him the common People, faid; Hearken, and

understand what I say.

11. Eating with Hands not washed just before, does not make a Man impure, as the Pharifees vainly teach. For real Purity and Impurity does not confift in outward cleanliness or uncleanliness of the Body, but they are inward and moral dispositions of Mind. Every thing that God has created, is in its own nature pure; and \* nothing that entreth into a Man's Mouth, and goeth down into his Stomach, can of it felf make him appear finful and unclean in the fight of God. They are those things only, which come out of a Man; Thoughts and Defires proceeding from his Heart and Mind; that can defile him in This Sense.

12. Then came the Disciples to Jefus, and said; Do you not perceive that the *Pharises* are angry and enraged at what you say? And that they are likely to bring you into some Danger, for speaking thus openly against their Traditions?

ditions?

13. But Jesus answered, faying: They may be angry and rage, but ye need not fear them; for both they and their Doctrines, not being from God, shall be destroyed and perish together.

14. Let them alone, and do not trouble your felves about them. They are blind, ignorant, and proud

Teachers:

<sup>\*</sup> That is, no kind of Meat or Drink makes a Man a Sinener, tho' the quantity may through Intemperance, which is a Vice of the Mind.

C

W

pa

of

ca

co

to

m

Lo

Da

Wi

ed

his

and

fay

wa

aft

eda

fen

loft

of

and

fay

me

Ge

Teachers: They know not the Truth, and they refuse to be instructed in it: They shall perish therefore in their Obstinacy themselves, and as many as will be led by them, preferring Ignorance and Superstition before Knowledge and true Religion, shall also perish with them.

15. Then faid *Peter* to Jesus; explain to us more fully what you have now faid, about the things that do or do not

make Men unclean.

16. Jesus answered; Are ye who ought to teach others, so dull yet and slow to understand a thing your selves, and that in so manifest and plain a Case?

17. Do ye not yet conceive, how whatever a Man eateth, goeth into his Stomach, and paffeth through his Body; and being wholly corporeal, affecteth on\* See Note ly his Body; without having \* of it

on Ver. 11. felf, merely for being of this or that kind, any effect upon the Man to make

him better or worse?

18 & 19. But the things which come out of a Man, proceeding from his Heart and Mind; fuch as are wicked and dishonest Intentions, base Contrivances and evil Speeches, Murder and Hatred, Adultery and Fornication and all kinds of Unclearness, Thest and Fraud and all Cheats, False Witness and Lies, Prophaneness and the like; these do truly and properly defile a Man.

which make a Man unclean and finful in the fight of God; But to eat with unwashed Hands, which does not at all affect the Mind, cannot make a Man unclean.

blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jefus faid, Are yealfo yet without understanding?

in Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 5

21 ¶ Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a Woman of Canaan came out of the fame coasts, and cried unto him, faying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But heanswered not a word. And his disciples came and befought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

h

7,

0

ſe

ne

h

d

n.

he

vil

rs,

tilse

e-

he

file

eat nen not 24 But heanswered and said, I am not sent, but unto the loss sheep of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

21. ¶ After these things, Jesus retired to the Borders of the Country of Tyre and Sidon.

22. And while he was there, there came a Heathen Woman of that Country, and cryed after him, faying; Lord,

I have heard of the many Miracles you have wrought, and the good Works you have done, and I believe you to be a Teacher fent from God: I befeech you, have pity upon me, and heal my Daughter, who lies now in my House

miserably afflicted with an evil Spirit.

23. Jefus, knowing the Womans Faith, and intending to reproach the Obstinacy of the Jews Unbelief, by giving an evident Proof and Tryal of the Constancy of this poor Gentile; seemed at first to despise and neglect her, by giving her no Answer at all: Insomuch that his Disciples, wearied with her Importunity, desired him to send her away with some Answer or other, that they might not be troubled with her continually following them.

24. But Jesus said: I am not \* now fent unto the Gentiles; the Design of my coming into the World, is to make the first Offers of Mercy to the Jews, who are the peculiar People of God; to convince them by my Miracles, and to reform them by my Preaching.

25. The Woman then came up to him, and kneeling down before him, faid; Lord, do not reject me, but grant me this one Fayour.

<sup>\*</sup> The Mercy of the Gospel was not to be offered to the Gentiles, till after Christ's Resurrection.

26. Jesus answered: It is not fit to take that Bread which God has designed for his own Children, and give it to the Dogs; I must not dispose of those Favours to Gentiles and Strangers, which God has sent me to bestow among his own People the Jews.

27. The Woman replied: 'Tis true, Lord; Yet as the Dogs are every where fuffered, to eat the Crumbs that fall from their Master's Table; so out of that bounteous Liberality, wherewith you dispense among the Fews the abundance of God's Mercy, I beg you would not deny me this one small Petition.

28. At this Answer, Jesus, as it were surprized and vanquished with the greatness and constancy of the Womans Faith, said; O Woman, very extraordinary is your Faith and Trust in God, far greater than I have ordinarily found even among the Jews themselves; be it therefore done unto you, according to your Desire. And her Daughter was found to be healed at that very instant.

29. ¶ After this, Jesus departed from the Borders of Tyre and Sidon, and returned towards the Lake of Galilee; and he went up, and sat upon the

top of a Hill.

30. And the People who had feen his former Miracles, gathered again about hira, and brought to him all manner of difeased Persons, whether they were lame, or blind, or dumb, or maimed, or whatever other Infirmity they laboured under; and he healed them every one.

31. Infomuch that the Multitude were aftonished beyond measure, seeing those that had been lame and maimed, to walk; those that had been blind, to see; those that had been dumb, to

26 But heanfwered and faid, It is not mete to take the childrens bread, and cast it to dogs.

27 And she faid, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29 And Jefus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the fea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and fat

down there.

30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them thosethat were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus seet, and he healed them:

3 I Infomuch that the multitude wondred when they faw the dumb to fpeak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind unt
I I
on
bec
nue
thre

to:

rifi

rae

ples Wh hav intl to fi

IW

awa

untermand and and man

tude

the state of the s

disci titud to see: and they glorified the God of Ifrael.

32 ¶ Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and faid, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread inthe wilderness, as to fill so great a mul-

titude?

34 And Jefus faith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they faid, Seven, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to fit down on

the ground.

y

t

٧

C

o

36 And he took the feven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat; and were

fpeak; and all forts of Diseases healed with a Word. And they gave Praise and Glory to the God of *Israel*, who had sent amongst them so great a Prophet.

32. Then Jesus calling to him his Disciples, said; I pity these poor People, who have nothing to eat: If I should send them away fasting, some that have far to go, would be in danger of fainting before they could get

home.

33. The Disciples, forgetting how he had lately fed miraculously five thoufand Men, seemed surprized, and said; Which way can we get Victuals enough in this defert place, to satisfie so great a multitude?

34. Jefus knowing his own Power, and what he intended to do, faid; How much have you amongst you? They answered; Only seven Loaves of

Bread, and a few small Fishes.

35 & 36. Then Jesus, commanding the People to sit down in Ranks upon the Ground, took the Bread and Fish in his Hands; and when he had given Thanks to God and blessed them, he brake and gave them to the Disciples, and the Disciples distributed them to the multitude.

37 & 38. And though the Number of People that did eat, was not less than four thousand Men, besides Women and Children; yet such was the efficacy of the divine Power evidenced in the increase of the Bread and Fish, upon Christ's giving his Blessing, that not only all this Multitude had enough and were satisfied, but there remained moreover as many H 2

Chap. XVI.

Ch

be 1

red:

ye h

disc the

of t

adul

on

fign

nof

it,

the And

and

Fragments, as, when they were gathered up, filled feven Bread-baskets.

39. After this, Jesus sent away the People; and went himself by Water into the Country of Magdala.

filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, feven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, befide women and children.

39 And he fent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

#### CHAP. XVI.

The Pharisees ask a Sign from Heaven, and are denied, ver.

1. The Disciples warned to take heed of the Leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees, ver. 5. The Peoples Opinion of Christ, and Peter's Confession of him, ver. 13. Jesus foretels his Death, and rebukes Peter for speaking against it, ver. 21. The necessity of hearing Afflictions and Persecutions, ver. 24.

A Bout this time some of the superstitious Pharisees and unbelieving Sadducees came to Jesus to tempt him and ask him captious Questions, that they might find some opportunity of reproaching and accusing him. And they desired that he would show some miraculous Sign, immediately from Heaven; which might demonstrate him to be sent by God, and to act by his Power and Commission.

2 & 3. But Jesus knowing their Obstinacy and Malice, answered them thus. Ye Hypocrites, wherefore do ye urge me to show you more Signs;

fees alfowith the Sadducees, came, and tempting, defired him that he would shew them a fign from heaven.

2He answeredand faid unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be sair weather: for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be

difc to they to ta be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, but can ye not discern the figns of the times.

4 A wicked and adulterous generation feeketh after a fign, and there shall no fign be given unto it, but the fign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

72

us

ft

ri-

th

ne,

le-

he

1 2

ind

m,

ng,

fair

the

the

will

be

5 And when his disciples were come to the other fide, they had forgotten to take bread.

as if God had not already given you fufficient plain Tokens, to know both who I am, and wherefore I am fent? Ye are skilful enough in smaller Matters, to observe the Signs and Tokens of Things that are to happen; ye can guess by the Face and Colour of the Sky, what Weather is like to be the next Morning or Evening. Why hen will you not take pains in Affairs of greater Concern, to observe the Periods and Revolutions of Things? Why can you not study to learn from the Predictions of the Prophets, and from the Things which ye fee accordingly come to pass, to know the Time and the Person of the Messias.

4. But ye are a degenerate and perverse Generation of Men. Ye have feen many of the Things, which were foretold of the Messias, already accomplished in me; and yet ye will not understand nor believe. Ye have feen me already work many and Miracles before your Faces, and yet nothing will convince you but more Signs. I tell you, God will not vouchfafe any more Signs to this Generation, but only this one to render them inexcufable; that as Jonas, after having been three days buried in the Sea in the Belly of the Whale, was cast up again alive; fo Christ, after he shall be killed and buried in the Earth, shall on the third day be raised again.

5. Having given this Answer, Fesus turned away from the Pharisees and Sadducees, and left them, and went with his Disciples over the Lake; and as they were in their Passage to the other Side, they found that they had

forgotten to take Bread.

H 3 6. Where-

# A Paraphrase on

- 6. Whereupon Fesus taking occasion from the Similitude of Bread to draw some useful Instructions for his Disciples, bad them take care to avoid the Leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees; meaning their Dostrine and Hypocrisie, which was apt to spread like Leaven.
- 7. But the Disciples not understanding his Meaning, said among themselves; This is to rebuke us for our forgetfulness in not taking Bread.
- 8. Jesus knowing their Mistake, said to them; Why are you so disturbed and troubled at your having forgot to take Bread? Do you think I am concerned and speak about that?
- 9. Do you not know how easie it would be for me to provide Bread, if that were the thing I was concerned about? Have you forgotten how I once fed five thousand Men with five Loaves, and yet there remained no less than twelve Baskets full of Fragments?
- 10. And how at another time I fed four thousand Men with seven Loaves, and there remained no less than seven Baskets full of Fragments?
- 11. Why then are you fo dull and flow of Understanding, as to think that I spake about Bread, when I bad you take heed of the Leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees?
- 12. Then they understood, that it was not Bread that he meant, but the evil Doctrines and Hypocrific of the Pharifees and Sadducees.

# Chap. XVI.

6 ¶ Then Jesus faid unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reafoned among themfelves, faying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jefus perceived, he faid unto them, O ye of little faith, why reafon ye among your felvesbecause ye have brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

10 Neither the feven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understaud that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then underflood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine doé rife Sade rican

of he ples do the

fon the one the

Sor

fay Pet faid

the

Go

fw hir Sir fle

un art

the

ga Pr

# Chap. XVI.

I.

us

ke

of

he

he

ea-

m-

t is

ta-

Je-aid

of

ea-

our

ave

?

yet

her five five

ow

ye

the

the

and

cets

hat

aud

tto

ing

ould

lea-

ees, du-

lerhat not ven the ine

doctrine of the Pharifees, and of the Sadducees.

13 9 When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, faying, Whom do men fay, that I, the Son of man, am?

14 And they faid, Some fay that thou art John the Baptist, fome Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He faith unto them, But whom fay ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and faid, Thou art Christ the fon of the living God.

17 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto him, Bleffed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for fleshand blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

18 And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

#### St. MATTHEW.

13. ¶ After this, Jesus travelled through the Country about Cafarea Philippi; and as he was walking in the Way, he asked his Disciples, What they heard Men talk about him, and Whom People thought him to be?

14. They faid; Some think you to be John the Baptist, risen again from the Dead: Others think you to be Elias, the Fore-runner of the Messiah: Others think you to be Feremiah, or some other of the Prophets.

15. Then he asked them, Whom they themselves thought him to be?

16. Peter answered; You are Christ, the Messiah, the Son of the most High God; fent into the World for the Redemption of Israel, and to discover the whole Will of God to Mankind.

17. Then faid Jesus to him; Blessed and happy are you, Peter: For this your Confession is not a bare humane Conjecture, but a thing revealed to you by the Spirit of God.

18. By your Constancy therefore in this good Confession, you shall eminently be, what your Name fignifies, a Rock: that is, you shall after my Refurrection and Ascension, be a firm, unshaken, and immoveable Professor of the Truth: You shall be the + first + See Acts Preacher of my true Religion to the 10. Gentile World; and fo become as it

H 4

were \* the first part that is laid of that Foundation, upon which my Church shall begin to be built; which shall afterwards, as a well-proportioned Building, be continued and increased by the addition of sincere Converts in their several degrees; and all the Powers of Death aud Hell shall never be able utterly to destroy it.

\* See Acts of the Messas, and make \* the first Publication of the Gospel to the Gentiles. And whatever Ordinances you shall by the Assistance of the Holy

† See Acts Ghost make and † establish, for the orderly Settlement of the Churches; your Determination shall be ratified and confirmed of God.

20. Thus Jesus made himself plainly known to his Disciples. But then, either because he would not provoke the unbelieving Pharifees, to apprehend him before his Time; or because he would not give occasion to the Multitude to come together feditiously, and make him (according to their false Notions of the Messiah) a Temporal King; or because he knew it to be more agreeable to his Design, that Men should collect and conclude who he was, from his Doctrine and Miracles, than that they should be told expresly by his Disciples; therefore he strictly

19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatfoever thou shalt bind on earth, shallbe bound in heaven: and whatfoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

<sup>\*</sup> That the Rock here mentioned, is not the Confession, but the Person of Peter, seems plain from the Construction of the Words; But then 'tis also as evident, that by the Churches being built upon him, is not meant his being the only Foundation of it, or having Supremacy over it, but his being the first Preacher of the Gospel in order of time. Thus Ephes. 2. 22. Ye are built upon the Foundation of the Aposlles, &c. See also Revel. 21. 14.

commanded his Disciples, not to publish in plain Terms, that he was Christ the Messiah.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jefus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and se killed, and be raised again the third day.

d

a-

er

n

ell

ras

the

rds;

ouilt

or the

the the

mon

- 22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, faying, Be it far from thee, Lord; this shall not be unto thee.
- 23 But he turned, and faid unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou favourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.
- Jefus unto his difciples, If any man will come after

- known to them his Glory and Power, he thought it a fit Season to acquaint them also with his Humiliation and Sufferings; that they might not, being puffed up with Great Thoughts of his Glory, be surprized and terrified at the Day of his Affliction. From this time therefore he began to tell them, that he must go to ferusalem, and there suffer many things, and be cruelly used by the Rulers of the Jews, and at last be put to death; but that on the Third Day he should rise again.
  - 22. But his Disciples understood nothing of this. And Peter particularly, whose Thoughts were full of Glory and Greatness, was so disturbed at this Discourse, that he could not forbear, but took Jesus aside and expostulated with him, saying; God forbid, that you who are the Son of God, the Messiah and Redeemer of Israel, should have any such thing happen unto you.
  - 23. But Jesus turning about to him with displeasure, faid; Nay, now you are become my Enemy and Hinderer. When you made a good Confession, I commended and extolled you; but now you deserve a severe Reproof: For you talk like a weak Man, and show your self to understand nothing of God's Dispensations, and of the Way wherein he designs to redeem Mankind.
  - 24. ¶ After this, Jesus said to his Disciples. I my self am to be perfected by Sufferings: and whoever will be a True

True Disciple of mine, must be willing to follow my Example: He must absolutely resign himself to the Will of God, renouncing all worldly Desires, and resolving both to do and suffer whatever God shall think fit to require of him.

25. And let him not think much, if he be forced even to lay down his Life for the Sake of True Religion. For they who fave their Lives in this prefent time, by basely complying with Temptations to forsake their Religion; these only are they who most truly lose them, by incurring eternal Death. But he that constantly perseveres, and loses his Life in this present Time, to preserve his Religion and his Virtue; does most truly save it unto Eternal Happiness.

26. For what comparison is there, between all the Things that this prefent World can afford, even if one could posses himself of them All; and the saving or losing a Man's Soul eternally? Or what valuable Consideration can be given for a Man's Soul?

27. For the Time is coming, when Chrift shall appear in the Majesty of God, and with the glorious Attendance of his holy Angels, to pass a final Judgment upon all Mankind, and to reward every one according to his Works.

28. The Time indeed of this last Judgment, God has not thought fit to reveal: But I affure you there are some here present, who shall live to see the Kingdom of Christ begun, in his glorious Resurrection and Ascension, and in his executing Judgment upon the unbelieving Jews in the final Destruction of their City and Nation.

me, let him deny himfelf, and take up his crofs, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own foul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his foul?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

28 Verily I fay unto you, There be fome standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

CHAP.

### CHAP. XVII.

Christ's Transfiguration, ver. 1. That John the Baptist was Elias, ver. 10. A Lunatick healed, and the Disciples rebuked for want of Faith, v. 14. Christ foretelleth his Death and Resurrection, ver. 22. Christ payeth Tribute, ver. 24.

Nd after fix days, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart.

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

ABOUT a Week after this, Jefus designing to give his Disciples some small Representation of his future Glory, went up privately into a Mountain, and took with him Peter and Fames and John.

2. And as he was praying in the prefence of these Disciples, he was changed into the appearance of a glorified Body; so that his Face did shine as the brightness of the Sun, and his Cloaths became white and glittering as the Light.

3. And at the same time there appeared two other Persons, in a glorious Form likewise, namely *Moses* and *Elias*; and they talked with Jesus concerning the things that he was to suffer, and of the Glory which was afterwards to follow.

4. All this the Disciples that were present, saw and heard; but being very drowsie, and also in a great Consternation and Suprize, they understood not what it meant. Yet moved with the strangeness and glory of the Vision, and recovering a little from their Fear, their Minds were filled with an unusual Pleasure: And Peter, who was in all things forwarder than the rest, said to Jesus;

Jesus; Lord, how great is this Glory! How blessed a Sight is this! How Happy should we be, if we might but continue here! Give us leave to build three Apartments, for Thee, and for Moses, and for Elias; and we will dwell here.

5. Scarcely had Peter faid these Words, when suddenly Moses and Elias vanished in a bright Cloud, and Jesus was lest alone. And the Disciples heard the Voice of God out of the Cloud, saying; This is my beloved Son, whom I have chosen to reveal my Will to Mankind: Be not desirous of Visions and extraordinary Appearances; but as ye have hitherto followed Moses and the Prophets, so from henceforward hear and obey Him.

6. The Disciples, astonished at the Greatness and Majesty of this Divine Voice, fell down upon their Faces to the Ground, and were greatly affright-

ed.

7. But Jesus came to them, and taking them up, comforted them, and bid them not be afraid.

8. And when they came to themfelves, they faw Jefus alone, and in his ufual Form, as he was before the Vifi-

on appeared.

9. Then they came down from the Hill; And as they were in the Way, Jesus knowing that the World was not yet capable of understanding the design and meaning of this glorious Appearance, commanded his Disciples not to report it abroad till after his Refurrection.

10. Accordingly the Disciples kept the Thing secret for the present: Only they debated privately among themselves, what those Sufferings of Christ, 5 While he yet fpake, behold, a bright cloud over-fhadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which faid, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleafed; hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were fore afraid.

7 And Jefus came and touched them, and faid, Arife, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they faw no man, fave Jefus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them faying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his difciples asked him, faying, faying, Why then fay the fcribes, that Elias must first come?

11 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto them, Elias shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I fay unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him what foever they lifted: likewife shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the difciples understood that he spake unto them of John the

Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and faying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my fon, for he is lunatick, and fore vexed: for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they

which *Moses* and *Elias* talk'd of, should be; and what his Resurrection from the Dead meant. That these were Things to be accomplished by him as he was the Messiah, they could not doubt; But one thing they stuck at, namely that *Malachi* had prophesied, and their Doctors had constantly taught them, that *Elias* ought first to have appeared publickly, before the Messiah could show himself: And they resolved to ask Jesus about it.

as the Jewish Doctors tell you, that Elias was first to come, and to prepare Mens Hearts for the reception of the

Meffiah.

12. But this ought not to raise any Scruple in your Minds concerning me: For Elias has indeed appeared accordingly, only the Jews did not receive and acknowledge him, but he was perfecuted and slain; and in like manner will they deal also with Christ himfelf.

13. Then they understood, that John the Baptist was that Elias, whom the Prophet foretold should be the Forerunner of the Messiah.

14. ¶ Now when Jesus returned to the rest of his Disciples, whom he had not taken with him up into the Mount, but had lest them below with the Multitude; there met him a Man, who fell down before him, and said;

15. Lord, have pity upon my Son; for he is tormented with a Devil, and is Lunatick, and hath the Falling Sickness; so that he cannot keep himself from falling into the Fire or the Water

16. And I brought him in your Abfence to your Disciples, hoping that they might

Chap. XVII.

might have been able to have cast out the Devil, and to have cured my Son;

but they could not.

17. Then Jesus rebuked his Disciples for their want of Faith, faying : How long must I be with you? And how many Miracles must I work among you, before you will firmly believe me, and attain fuch a degree of Faith in my Name, to which God may annex the Power of working all Miracles? Let the young Man be brought hither to

18. Then they brought him to Jefus; and Jesus commanded the Devil to come out of him; and his Disease was

perfectly healed.

19. And when the People were gone; the Disciples, grieved that they had not been able to work this Miracle, came to Jesus alone, and asked him what was the Reason, that they were not able to cast out this Devil, and to heal the

young Man.

20. Jesus said: 'Twas for want of Faith in you, as well as in those who defired your Help. For verily if you had never fo little Faith in comparison, answerable in any measure to your Office and your Advantages, nothing should be too hard for you to effect for the Glory of God and in Confirmation of my Doctrine; but ye should beable to do even things feemingly as impoffible, as removing Mountains, and throwing them into the Sea.

21. Only ye must remember, that God does not grant the Power of working these greater Miracles, such as are casting out Devils, and the like; but to those whose Faith is strengthned by earnest Prayer and Fasting, and accould not cure

17 Then Jefus anfwered and faid, O faithlessandperverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I fuffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

tl

ra th

in

tl

C

th

bu

Pe

no tr

A

co

ho

ve

W

Sin

do

tri

NO

ftra

to.

lei

hir

ch

Rai

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and faid, Why could not we cast

him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I fay unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-feed, ye shall fay unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and taiting.

22 ¶ And

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jefus faid unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raifed again: and they were exceeding forry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute-money, came to Peter, and faid, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He faith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

e

0

h

-

y

n,

0

it

nd

oe

u.

is

ut

10

nd

26 Peter faith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus faith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithlanding, left we companied with great Devotion and Purity of Mind.

22. ¶ After this, Jesus returned with his Disciples to Capernaum through Galilee; and as they were in the Way, Jesus, to prepare his Disciples that they might not be overwhelmed with Sorrow at his Death, began to re-mind them again, that he must needs be delivered into the Hands of his Persecutors;

23. And that he must be slain by them, and that on the third Day he should rise again. But the Disciples understood not what he meant by Rising again, and they were grieved to hear of his Sufferings and Death.

24. Now when they were come home to Capernaum, where Jesus used to dwell; the Officers appointed to gather the yearly Offering for the Service of the Temple, came to Peter and asked him, if his Master would not pay the usual Offering.

25 & 26. Peter faid; Yes, I suppose so. And when they were come into the House, and Peter was about to ask him concerning it, Jesus prevented him, saying; Peter, what think you? If earthly Princes use to demand Tribute, not of their own Children and Families, but only of others; Do you not think there is the same Reason, that I, whom you acknowledge to be the Son of God, should be excused from paying any thing to the Service of the Temple.

27. Nevertheless, that we may not give them any occasion of blaming us, go to the Lake, and cast in a Hook, and take the first Fish that comes up; and you shall find a piece

or

of Money in his Mouth: that take, and give it to the Officers for my Offering and yours.

should offend them, go thou to the sea, and take up the sish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take and give unto them for me and thee.

thi

fi

m

fh

th

W

m

fo

ftc

ed

an

dre

de

off

mu

off

W

wh

CO

#### CHAP. XVIII.

Innocence and Humility requisite to the making good Christians, ver. 1. Of Scandal, and of Christian Reproof, ver. 6. and 15. Of forgiving the Penitent, and the necessity of shewing Mercy to others, that we our selves may obtain it of God, ver. 21.

1. A Tthis time the Disciples, filled with great Expectations of the Glory of Christ's Kingdom, began to dispute among themselves about Preheminence, and who should be Greatest in that Kingdom: till at last Jesus took Notice of the Dispute, and the Matter † was brought to be decided before him.

2 & 3. Then Jesus, setting a little Child before them, said: Ye are in a great Mistake: The Kingdom of

Notice of the Dispute, and the Matter † was brought to be decided before him. 2 & 3. Then Jesus, setting a little Child before them, said: Ye are in a great Mistake; The Kingdom of God, is not like the Kingdoms of this present World; Men shall not there be exalted, as they are here, by striving for Dignity and Preheminence; but they shall be esteemed only by their

T the fame time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And Jefus called a little child unto him, and fet him in the midst of them,

3 And faid, Verily I fay unto you, Except you be

<sup>+</sup> Not that they directly asked Fesus about it, but only by his discovering their Debate, Luke 9. 46, 47.

converted; and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whofoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me.

of

ne

ne

to

ho

he

ea-

lled

nto

n in

em,

Ve-

ou,

be

y by

rted

6 But who of the fe little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a milfone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the fea.

7 J Wountothe world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

Humility, Meekness Innocence, and want of Regard for the Things of the World; such as are the Qualities of this little Child.

4. So that they who in their Life and Conversation shall nearest approach to the unaffected Humility and harmless Innocence of this little Child; such Men shall be lookt upon as the best Members of my Church on Earth, and shall have the greatest degree of Glory in Heaven.

5. These, I say, are the Men, which shall be valued in the sight of God. And he that without respect to Temporal Considerations, shall entertain and encourage, and assist such Men, because they are; humble, and innocent, and Teachers of that Doctrine which makes Men such; shall be rewarded, as if he

had entertained me.

6. On the contrary, he that shall defpise or discourage, persecute or seduce any of these humble and innocent Persons, which believe and obey the Gospel; better were it for him that he had never been born, or that he had quickly perished by some untimely Death.

7. For dreadful and terrible are the Judgments which God will fend upon the World, for its contemning and discouraging, for its persecuting and seducing innocent and good Men. Such indeed is the State of Things, and the Wickedness of Men, that these Things must needs happen; and the Providence of God may for wise Reasons permit it to be so: But wo be to that Man, by whose Fault this shall come to pass, that any humble and good Man shall be persecuted, discouraged, or perverted and inticed into Sin.

1 8,69

8, 6 9. It may perhaps feem a hard Precept to Men of stubborn Spirits, to avoid being the occasion of any of these Evils; they must perhaps be forced to part with some of their dearest Pleafures, or most beloved Companions, which may be to them like plucking out a right Eye, or cutting off a right Hand: But if any thing as dear to them even as a right Hand or right Eye, be the occasion of their injuring the cause of Virtue and Piety; they had much better part with it, what difficulties foever may attend their doing fo, than incur the eternal displeasure of God.

10. Take heed therefore, and do not think it a light thing, to despise or discourage, or any way draw into Sin the meanest humble and good Man. Do not think it a small thing to lay a Stumbling-block before those, for whom God has so great a Concern, as to send his Angels from his own immediate Presence to minister unto them, and to watch over them.

be the occasion of Their Fall, whom God has thought fit to fend his Son into the World on purpose to redeem and

to fave.

12. For as a Man, that has, for Example, an hundred Sheep; if one of them chance to stray and be in danger to be lost, he presently leaves the rest and runs after that, and searches through all the Country for it;

13. And if he chance to find it, he expresses even a more sensible Joy upon occasion of the recovery of that which was in danger to be lost, than at the fasety of all the rest of the Flock

which had never strayed;

8 Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire.

that ye defpife not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

of man is come to fave that which was loft.

12 How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone aftray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goethinto the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone aftray?

13 And if so be that

\* See i

### Chap: XVIII.

that he find it, Verily I fay unto you, he rejoiceth more of that heep, then of the ninety and nine which went not aftray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of little ones thele should perish.

T

0

t,

ne

e,

nd

e:

ee

ife

ra-

ng

aft

eed

not

ttle

un-

nea-

do

the

ther

ven.

Son

e to

hich

nink

have

neep,

hem

tray,

eave and

into

, and

hich

fo be

that

15 Moreover. if thy brother shall trespassagainst thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but it he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

18 Verily I say unto you, Whatfoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatfoever ye

#### St. MATTHEW.

14. Even so God is not willing, that any the meanest of his Servants should perish; but employs the Ministry of his Angels to preserve them; and when they erred, has fent his Son into the World to recover them; and expects that ye should, every one in your station and proportion, endeavour to encourage those that stand, and with tenderness to recover those that fall.

15. If therefore any of your Fellow-Christians fin or commit a Trespass against you, use all possible means to recover and reclaim him. First tell him privately of his Fault between your felves, reprove and endeavour to convince him of it, and exhort him to Repentance; and if he be hereby perfuaded to amend, you have gained your purpole and laved your Brother.

16. But if he reject and despise your private Admonition, then take with you two or three other Persons; that by the presence of these Witnesses he may if possible, be convinced and ashamed, and by their Authority may be moved

to repent.

17. But if this method also prove ineffectual to reform him, then tell your Case to the whole Body of the Church, that he may be \* rebuked and admo-And if he be still Tim. nished before many. fo obstinate, as not to be wrought up- 20. & on by this publick Reproof and Cenfure; Cor. 2, 6, then you have delivered your felf, you have done your Duty, you may leave him as a desperately incorrigible Sinner, and have no more to do with

18. Affuredly I tell you, whatever ye shall determine upon Earth, proceeding according to these my Directions, shall

he confirmed and ratified by God in Heaven.

19. And whatever two or three of you shall agree to ask of God, in order to the acting comformably to the Instructions I have given you, shall certainly be granted by him.

20. For where-ever there be gathered together, tho' never so small a Congregation of you, in my Name and according to my Appointment; there am I always ready to affist and join with you,

and intercede for you.

21. Then Peter asked Jesus, saying; Lord, if a Man trespass against me, and repent; and afterwards trespass again, and repent; how often am I bound to forgive him, if he continues to repent after repeated Offences? Must

I forgive him feven times?

22. Jesus answered: Nay, you must not confine your Resolution of forgiving, to any number of Offences; but how often soever a Man may have trespassed against you, yet if he repent, you must continue to forgive him. For since God forgives Men more and greater Offences, which have been committed against his Divine Majesty; nothing can be more reasonable, than that they should be obliged to forgive one another their smaller Trespasses.

23. And this you will more clearly understand by an easie Similitude. A certain King called all his Servants to an Account, that he might see how each one stood indebted to him: Thus God examines and judges the Actions of all Men, who receive what they have from him, and are bound to employ it to his

Service and Glory.

24. Now when this King began to look into his Accounts, he found one

## Chap. XVII.

fhall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I fay unto you, that if two of you shall a-gree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven,

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and faid, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

22 Jefus faith unto him, I fay not unto thee, Until feven times: but, until feventy times feven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his fervants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which

## Chap. XVIII.

4

1,

n

y

if

2-

as

ıg

it

or

er

n.

ere

re

ner

ere

of

me

ind

WC

her

and

till

ith

not

l fe-

out,

mes

fore

1 of

un-

cing

fer-

hen

to

was

him hich which owed him ten thousand talents.

25 But forafmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be fold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

therefore fell down, and worshipped him, faying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27. Then the lord of that fervant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same fervant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow fervant fell down at his feet, and befought him, faying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30. And he would not: but

#### St. MATTHEW.

Man that owed him no less than ten thousand Talents. Thus God, when he inspects the Actions of Men, finds that some have wholly misemployed the Abilities he intrusted them with, and that all have committed very many Offences against him.

25. Then, this Man having spent all, and having nothing to pay, the King commanded him and all that he had to be fold, that so the Debt might be discharged: Thus God threatens wicked Men, to inflict the Punishment of their Sing upon them

Sins upon them.

26, & 27. But the Man fell on his Knees before the King, and promised, if he would give him time, to pay him all; whereupon the King in compassion set him at liberty, and forgave him the Debt. Thus God, when great Sinners appear forrowful, humble, and penitent, mercifully affords them space of Repentance, and is ready to forgive them all their past Transgressions.

28. The Man being thus set at liberty, meets afterwards with one of his own Debtors, who owed him only an hundred Pence; and not considering how mercifully he had been dealt with himself, violently demands the Debt of him: Thus wicked Men, not considering how much Mercy they stand in need of themselves, and with what long suffering God defers and is willing to remit their own Punishment; are sierce to have the little Affronts, which others do to them, immediately revenged.

29. & 30. And the the poor Debtor fell down on his Knees, and begged only that he might have time allowed him; yet this Man would hear nothing, but threw him prefently into Prison:

I 3 Thu

Thus wicked Men, though those who have offended them repent, and desire Pardon, yet they obstinately persist in

their defire of Revenge.

31, & 32, & 33. But when the King heard of this his Behaviour, he called him before him again, and charged him with his Ingratitude and Cruelty, in shewing no Compassion to his Fellow-Servant, after he had received so much Mercy himself. Thus when God sees those, the Punishment of whose greater Crimes he had with-held in order to give them space of Repentance, refuse to pardon the smaller Offences of others committed against them, he becomes highly provoked.

34, & 35. And then the King having no more Patience, commanded him to be cast into Prison, till he should pay the utmost Farthing. Thus God finally cuts those off without Pardon, who insist upon Revenge, and will not forgive the Offences of their Brethren.

went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-fervants faw what was done, they were very forry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, faid unto him, O thou wicked fervant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-fervant, even as I had pity on

thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP.

I.

m he ot.

his

w

ne,

ry

eir

vas

his

he

im,

0

fer-

hee

ause

me:

not

had

thy

even

on

lord

and

to

, till

all

unto

wife

venly

from

rgive

e his

tref-

AP.

### CHAP. XIX.

Of Divorces, ver. 1. Of Marriage, ver. 10. Christ receiveth and blesseth young Children, ver. 13. Instructeth a young Man about Religious Perfection, ver. 16. The great Temptation of Riches, ver. 23. The Reward of those who lose all for Christ's Sake, ver. 27.

ND it came to pass that when Jesus had sinished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan:

- 2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.
- 3 The Pharifees also came unto him, tempting him, and faying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he anfwered and faid unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made 1. WHEN Jesus had instructed his Diciples with these Discourses, in Humility, Meekness, and readiness to forgive Injuries; he departed out of Galilee, and went into the Borders of Judea beyond Jordan.

2. And there also the People gathered themselves together after him, as they had done in Galilee and other Places; and he healed all that were sick and insirm amongst them, and instructed them in the Doctrine of true Religion.

3. But the *Pharifees*, as usual, grieved at his Doctrine and Miracles, watched all opportunities of finding some Accusation against him, and of discrediting him before the People: And particularly, hoping to entangle him in his Talk, they came and asked him whether he thought it lawful for a Man to put away his Wife upon any account: Imagining, that if he should say it was lawful, he must contradict his \* own \* Chap. 5. Doctrine; and if he should say it was ver. 32. not, he must seem to deny the Law of Moses.

4. Jesus, knowing their Thoughts, prevented their Cavil by giving an Answer out of the Scripture it self, saying; Have ye not read (Gen. 1. 27.) that I 4 when

when God created Man at the first, he created them Male and Female?

5. And do ye not remember how the Scripture saith, (Gen. 2. 24.) Therefore shall a Man leave his Father and his Mother, his dearest Relations, and shall cleave unto his Wife; and they two shall be joined together by so strict and inseparable an Union, that they shall be look'd upon as but One Body, and may no more be divided than the Members of the fame Body?

6. Since therefore God hath joyned them together by fo strict a tie, no Man can separate and part them, without breaking this Primitive Law of God.

7. The Pharifees replied; Why then doth the Law appoint in some Cases, that a Man should give his Wife a Writing of Divorcement, and put her away.

8. Jesus answered: Mofes permitted this, not because it was good, but because he was forced to it through the perverseness and hardness of your Hearts, to prevent greater Evils. For at the beginning, before the World was become corrupt and degenerate, no fuch thing was fuffered.

9. And under the Gospel-state, wherein Primitive Integrity and the Original Institutions of God are to be restored, no such thing shall be permitted any more: But who foever shall put away his Wife, and marry another, except only when it be for the cause of Adultery that the first is put away, shall be accounted guilty of causing both her, and him that shall afterwards marry her, to commit Adultery.

10. Hereupon the Disciples, not yet wholly free from Fewish Prejudices,

# Chap. XIX.

them at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And faid, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put afunder.

7 They fay unto him, Why did Mofes then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away.

8 He faith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, fuffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not fo.

9 And I say unto Whofoever you, shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and thall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

10. His disciples fay unto him,

If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he faid unto them, All men cannot receive this faying, fave they to whom it is given.

12 For there are eunuchs, fome which were fo born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men:and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heavens fake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

13 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

and thinking this an hard faying, \* anfwered: If this be the Case, that a Man may not put away his Wife for any less reason than Adultery, the hazards and inconveniences of Marriage will be so great, that it should seem better for a Man not to marry at all.

11. Jesus said, 'Tis true; but all Men have not Continence to abstain wholly, and to live chastly without mar-

rying; but only fome few.

12. And those few come to have this Power by one of these three ways; either by the Happiness of their natural Temper and Constitution, or by Violence and an unnatural maiming of the Body; or by a voluntary Resolution of fubduing their natural Inclinations, that they may attend the Business of Religion with fewer Incumbrances and greater Freedom from Secular Affairs. The first of these ways, is not at all in a Man's own Power, but merely the Gift of God: The fecond is unwarrantable and unlawful: The third is rare, and of great difficulty; and they, who know their own strength, may, if they please, endeavour to attain to this Excellency.

13 ¶ After this, some of the believing Fews brought young Children to Jesus, that he might lay his Hands on them, and bless them, and recommend them to God by his Prayers. But his Disciples, thinking those that brought them too busie and troublesom, began to chide them and keep them

back.

<sup>\*</sup> Afterward to Jesus privately in the House; as appears Mark 10. 10.

(

14. Which when Jesus perceiv'd, he rebuked his Disciples, saying: Do not hinder the Children from being brought to me. For 'tis these, and Men qualified like these, with Innocency, Humility, and a teachable Disposition, free from all Prejudices and Customs of Sinning, that are the only fit Persons to be made Members of my Church on Earth, and Inheritors of the Kingdom of God in Heaven.

15. Then he laid his Hands on them, and bleffed them, and departed.

16. ¶ And as he was going, there met him a young Man of good quality, who being of a religious Difposition, and hearing that Jesus taught new and purer Precepts of Virtue and Piety, came to him and faid; Good Master, what excellent and extraordinary thing shall I do, whereby I may attain eternal Life?

17. Jesus answered him; Why do you call me Good, whom you do not know to be any other than a meer Man? There is none truly Good but God, who is the only Author of all Goodness and Happiness. However, as to your Question, you know what are the Conditions of Eternal Life; keep the Commandments of God.

18, & 19. Then the young Man asked, What Commandments? Jefus faid, not to commit Murder, nor do Wrong; not to commit Adultery, nor Fornication; not to Steal, nor Cheat and Defraud any Man; not to accuse any one falsly, nor pervert Justice; to honour and reverence your Parents and all other Superiours; and to do to all Men, as you would they should do to you, with Equity and Charity.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven,

is And he laid bis hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ And behold, one came and faid unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

17 And he faid unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 Hefaith unto him, Which? Jefus faid, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy felf.

20 The

## Chap. XIX.

IS

le

0

e.

d

d

d

at

al

d

y

ie

ne

at

u

e,

to

ealt ou it alt

lt t-

ıy

u

1-

ne

20 The young man faith unto him, All thefethings have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jefus faid unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and fell that thou haft, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that faying, he went away forrowful: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then faid Jefus unto his difciples, Verily I fay unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I fay unto you, It is easier for a camel

### St. MATTHEW.

20. The young Man, rejoycing at his Answer, and hoping to be greatly commended by Jesus, replied: All these Commandments have I obeyed from a Child; what further Instructions have

you for me?

21. Jesus answered: These are the necessary Duties, which God hath made the indispensable Conditions of Life. But if you aim at a great degree of Perfection, and will do something excellent and extraordinary; then go sell all your Estate, and give it to the Poor, and come and follow me through Afflictions and Poverty; and laying aside all worldly Affairs, apply your self wholly to be a Preacher of the Gospel; and you shall have an \* extraordinary degree of Reward in Heaven.

22. At this Answer the young Man was greatly troubled, and went away very forrowful. For he was rich, and very unwilling to part with his Estate.

23. Whereupon Jesus took occasion to represent to his Disciples, how great a Snare the Love of Riches is; how unsit it makes a Man, to be a perfect Disciple of Christ; and how hard it is, for a rich Man to be a good Christian.

24. And he faid; Such is the deceitfulness of the love of Riches, that it is an exceeding hard thing, (than which

<sup>\*</sup> It does not appear, but the young Man might have done well if he had gone away satisfied with Christ's first Answer. So that our Saviour does not seem to have bidden him sell his Estate, as a thing absolutely necessary to his being a good Man, but only as a thing necessary at that time to his being a Preacher of the Gospel; and that he might reprove his Considence; and that he might have an occasion to represent to his Disciples, the great danger and mischief of the love of Riches.

hardly

in

m

th

01

ju

tr

0

fa

C

f

h

la

ł

hardly any thing can be imagined more difficult,) for a rich Man to become a worthy Disciple of Christ, and to attain that resigned disposition of Mind, and readiness to part with all things for the sake of Religion, which God requires.

25. When the Disciples heard this, they seemed greatly surprized, and said; if the way of Life be so very difficult,

who then can be faved?

26. But Jesus looking upon them with a compassionate Countenance, as pitying their present anxiety of Mind, answered: 'Tis true; That disposition of Mind which the Gospel requires, is fo Holy and Spiritual; and the Temptations which much Riches occasion, are fo many and great; that, morally speaking, it is hardly possible in the ordinary course of things, for a very rich Man to look beyond the Advantages of this present World, and be a good Christian: But by the Grace and Affiftance of God, 'tis possible for such Men to overcome all those Temptations, to make a good use of their Wealth, and to become worthy Disciples of Christ.

27. Then faid Peter to Jesus; Well, we have actually done all, that you required of this young Man: And though we had not indeed great Possessions, we have forsaken all that we had, we have left our dearest Relations, we have quitted the Employment we lived by, and we have followed you in Poverty and Want: What Reward then shall

we have?

28. Jefus answered: Verily ye my Apostles, who have now chearfully followed me in this present state of Humiliation and Sufferings, shall at the final Judgment, at the great and generated

to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his difciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, faying, Who then can be faved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 Then anfwered Peter, and faid unto him, Behold, we have forfaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me

in

in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall fit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forfaken houses, or brethren, or fifters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my names fake, shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

think

d

ı, h e in

many 30 But that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first.

ral \* Renovation of Things, when I \* 'E, 7 shall be exalted to everlasting Domi- Taxis your nion, and fit upon the Throne of eter- of eternal Glory; ye, I say, shall then be exalted also, and shall sit by me in the next Degree of Glory and Power.

29. And all other good and fincere Men, who for the fake of true Religion and Virtue, shall suffer any Losses in this present World; these also, befides that their Lossesshall be abundantly recompensed even in this Life, by the Joy of a good Conscience, by the Love and Affistance of all good Men, by the Comfort of the Holy Ghost, and by the glorious expectation of future Happiness; shall moreover be reward-

ed with eternal Life.

30. Only many of those, who are bere first in Time, and seem now to have the Precedence in many Advantages, (as the Jews, which are first called,) shall then be ranked in a lower Degree: And on the contrary, many of those who are here later in Time, and feem now inferior in many respects, (as the Gentiles which are last called,) shall then, if they come in readily and heartily, and be fincere and more diligent in their Time, equal or exceed the former in Dignity and Glory.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. XX.

The Parable of the Labourers hired into the Vineyard, ver. 1. Jesus again foretelleth his Passion, ver. 17. Upon occasion of Salome's Petition, he teacheth his Disciples Humility, ver. 29. Two blind Men healed, ver. 29.

1. NOW the Equity of God's thus distributing his Rewards, that those to whom his Will is discovered later, if they be fincere and diligent in their Labours, may be so honoured by the abundance of the Divine Liberality, as to be equalled or even preferred to those who were called first; the Equity, I fay, of this, may be illustrated by this Similitude. A Housbolder went out early in the Morning, to hire Labour-ers into his Vineyard; Thus God in the beginning of the World reveal'd his Will to Mankind, and that in a more special manner to the Patriarchs and Ancestors of the Fews: And \* thus also to some Men he has discovered his Will early, and brought them to the knowledge of the Truth in the beginning or former part of their Lives.

TOR the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an houfholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

<sup>\*</sup> Though this Parable was primarily intended, to shew the Equity of God's equalling the Gentiles with the Jews; yet since one great Objection of the Jews against the equalizing with them the Gentile Converts, was the Idolatry and Wickedness of the former part of these Gentiles Lives; and since the several Parts of the Parable may aptly enough be applied to the different Parts of Man's Life, as well as to the different Ages of the World; I have therefore endeavoured to express both these Senses together.

#### St. MATTHEW.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, he fent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and faw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And faid unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

ıf-

nt

he

a-

is

the

yet

ing

ck-

nce

lied

fer-

ex-

nd

5 Again he went out about the fixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is

2. And agreeing with the Labourers for a Peny a Day, he fent them to work in his Vineyard: So God, when first he revealed his Will to Mankind, promised Life and Happiness as the Reward of Obedience: And the same condition is then offered to every particular Man, when he first comes to the use of Reason, and to understand the difference between Good and Evil.

3, & 4, & 5. Afterwards going out at the third Hour, and again at the fixth and ninth Hours, he found other Labourers standing idle in the Market; and them also he hired to go and work in the Vineyard, promising to give them what was reasonable: Thus God in the following Ages of the World made new Revelations of his Will, Moses, and the Prophets, &c. with repeated Promises of Life and Happiness to Obedience: And thus also those particular Men, whose Natural Knowledge of good and evil has been corrupted and worn out by a bad Education, God oft-times in the following parts of their Life, by affording them new Means of Knowledge, invites them to Repentance, and promises them Happiness.

6, & 7. Lastly, going out at the eleventh bour, he found other Labourers standing idle; and them also he hired into the Vineyard, promising to give them what was reasonable: Thus God in the latter Ages of the World, making a new Revelation of his Will by Christ, admitted the Gentiles, who had before lived in Ignorance and Wickedness, to the Conditions of the same Covenant with the Fews: And thus also many particular Persons, who

for

for \* want of Instruction have lived in Ignorance and Wickedness the greatest part of their Lives, do yet at last through the Mercy of God come to the Knowledge of the Truth, and Be-

lieve, and Obey it.

8. Now when the Evening was come, the Master commanded his Labourers to be called, and their Wages to be paid them, without respect to the order of time when they were hired: So at the end of the World God will reward all his Servants, not in Proportion to the times of their being called, but according to the sincerity of their Service.

9, 6 10. They who came in at the eleventh hour, because they wrought diligently during that time, received each one a Peny; and they who came in at the Morning, though they expected more for having laboured longer, yet according to their agreement, received each one likewise a Peny: So the Gentiles, and they who are late instructed in the Knowledge of the Truth, shall for their Sincerity and Diligence during their Time in the Service of God, receive the Reward of Eternal Life; and the Jews who came in first, though they expect some Preheminence over the last both in the Church here on Earth, and in the

right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vine-yard faith unto his fleward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received ed more, and they likewise received every man a peny.

<sup>\*</sup> Note, This part of the Parable does not countenance the late and wilfully deferred Repentance of Christians. For such Persons are not called into the Vineyard at the eleventh Hour, (as were the ignorant Gentiles,) but being called in at the first Hour by the early preaching of the Gospel, have yet stood idle (not in the Market, but) in the Vineyard till the eleventh Hour. Which is plainly a different Case; as Origen well observes upon the Place.

11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day.

e

n

e

n

at

ut

r,

ry

en

ey

ey

V-

ey

ed

y.

nce

our,

firft

idle

nth

ob-

And

14 But heanswered one of them, and faid, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

13 Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil, because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chofen.

World to come, shall yet only receive equally the same Reward.

first, murmured, that those which came in last, and laboured but one hour or two, should receive as much wages as they who had worked all day: Thus the Jews, who were the first People of God, and they who have been longest in the Church, valuing themselves upon outward Performances, may be apt to think it hard, that those who came in late, should be equalled to them in their Reward.

13 & 14 & 15. But the Master replied; Is it not just, if I pay you according to your agreement; and at the same time, out of my abundant liberality, give these others freely as much? May I not do what I will with mine own, and be bountiful to others for their great diligence and sincerity during their Time, without injuring you? Thus the equity of God's Dispensations may be vindicated, in that, while his Reward is not only free, but also infinitely greater than any Man's Work deferves, he injures no Man by his extraordinary Liberality to others.

many of those who were here later in time, and seem now inferiour in many Respects, (as the Gentiles, and they which are last called,) shall finally equal or even exceed others in Glory and Dignity: And many of those who are here first in time, and seem now to have the Precedence in many Advantages, (as the Jews and they which are first called) shall then be ranked in as low, or perhaps lower degree than the rest. For many indeed are Called K

early, and know the Will of God, and receive his Mercies, and enjoy great Advantages; But there are but few who improve themselves proportionably to those Advantages, and use them worthily, so as to attain an excellent and extraordinary Reward.

17. ¶ After these things, Jesus knowing that the time of his Sufferings drew nigh, went up towards Jerusalem. And, that his Apostles might be prepared against the Storm that was coming upon them, he took the Twelve aside, as they were going in the Way, and reminded them again, saying:

18. We are going up to Ferusalem; and I would have you remember, that, as I told you before, it is the Will of God that I should at last be delivered into the Hands of the chief Priests and Scribes, who have hitherto laid wait for me; and they shall cause me to be condemned to Death by an unjust Judgment:

19. And they shall deliver me over to the Roman Soldiers, to be abused and mocked, to be beaten and spit upon, and at last to be ignominiously crucified among Malesactors: But on the third Day I will rise again.

Wife of Zebedee, with her two Sons, James and John, thinking that immediately after this Refurrection which Jesus spake of, he would appear in great Pomp and Glory to restore to the Jews a temporal Kingdom; came to him, and desired that those her two Sons, who had hitherto been his constant Disciples and Followers, might at the opening of his Kingdom have the chief Places of Honour under

17 ¶ And Jefus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, wego up to Jerusalem, and the son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him todeath.

19 And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock and to feourge and to crucifie him: and the third day he shall rife again.

20 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her fons, worstipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he faid unto her, What wilt thou? She faith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on

thy

tl

G

thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdom.

22 But Jefus anfwered and fald, Ye
know not what ye
ask. Are yeable to
drink of the cupthat
I shall drink of, and
to be baptized with
the baptism that I
am baptized with?
They say unto him,
We are able.

u\$

a-

ve

he

to

go

nd

nall

the

ın-

ind

mn

eli-

en-

to

cru-

the

rife

ame

ther

chil-

ons,

him,

tain

lun-

wilt

un-

that

fons

e on

thy

23 And he faith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24. And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know the princes of the Gentiles exercise dohim, and be next in Dignity to his own Person.

22. Jesus answered: Ye are in a great mistake, and understand not what ye ask: My Kingdom is not, as ye fondly imagine, a temporal Kingdom, confifting in earthly Glory and Greatness; but 'tis a Spiritual Kingdom, confisting only in Holiness, Righteousness, and Godliness, and in the Spiritual Rewards of these Divine Virtues; And Places of Dignity therein, are not to be expected by Favour or Affection, but to be attained by Humility, by Patience and Sufferings. Can ye therefore follow my Example in bearing patiently Injuries, Sufferings, and Death? They faid, We can.

23. Jesus replied: Ye shall indeed follow me in Persecutions and Sufferings, and may thereby attain a Place in my Kingdom and a Share in my Rewards; But for the Chief Seat of Preheminence and Dignity above others, this is not mine to dispose of by any absolute Favour, but must be bestowed upon those Persons, and according to those Conditions and Qualifications, which God hath appointed.

24. Now when the other ten Apostles heard what these two Brethren desired, and what Answer Jesus gave them, they were angry and moved with indignation against them; not without something of the same Ambition and Envy in themselves, for fear the two Brothers should have been preferred before Them.

25. But Jesus called them all to him, and said; Ye have all vet a very wrong Apprehension of the Matter. Among the Gentiles indeed, and in the King-

K 2 doms

doms of this present World, Men strive ambitiously to get the Dominion one over another; and they who are greatest in Riches and Power, have the greatest Honour and Respect paid them by others:

26. But among you I will have things ordered by other Measures. He that desires to be Great and Honourable among You, let him seek to deserve his Honour, by Meekness and Lowliness; and let him exercise his Power,

affifting and doing good to All.

27. And he that defires to have the Dignity and Preheminence among you, let him be eminent for his Humility and Readiness to serve all Men.

not in domineering over any, but in

28. For thus even I my felf came not into the World to exercise Power and Dominion, to rule over Men, and to be served by them; but to serve, and affist, and do good to all Men, with all Humility, Meekness and Gentleness; and to lay down my Life for the Redemption of Mankind.

29. ¶ When Jesus had finished these Discourses, he travelled on with his Disciples towards Jerusalem; and when they had passed thro' Jericho, a very great multitude of People follow-

ed him.

30. And as they went in the Way, there fat two blind Men by the Road-fide; who hearing by the Multitude, that Jesus who had worked so many Miracles in the Land, was now going along that way, they cried out faying: Lord, we believe you to be a Teacher sent from God, and that you do these wonderful Works by his Power and Commission: We beseech you, have pity on us.

minion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And behold, two blind men fitting by the way fide, when they heard that Jefus paffed by, cried out, faying, Have mercy on us, OL ord, thou fon of David.

### Chap. XX.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

ot

ill

u,

ni-

ofo-

fa-

nim

the

ame

tred

nini-

e his

ma-

Jerinultinim.

ehold, en fity fide, rdthat v, criy, Have DLord, avid. 32 And Jefus ftood ftill, and called them, and faid, What will yethat I shall do unto you?

33 They fay unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jefus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received fight, and they followed him.

### St. MATTHEW.

31. But the multitude chid them, bidding them not make fuch a Noise to disturb and stop Jesus: Nevertheless they continued crying out, and That the more vehemently; Lord, we believe you to be the Messias, have pity on us.

32. Then Jesus stood still, and commanded them to be called to him; and when they came, he asked them, what they desired he should do.

33. They faid; Lord, we have heard of the many mighty Works which you have done for the Relief of fuch miserable Persons as we are, and we desire you would restore to us our fight.

34. Then Jesus took pity on them, and touched their Eyes; and their Sight was immediately restored, and they followed him in the Way.

K 3

CHAP.

a And

#### CHAP. XXI.

Christ rideth into Jerusalem, ver. 1. Driveth the Traders out of the Temple, ver. 12. Children make Acclamations to Jesus, ver. 14. Jesus curseth the Fig-tree, ver. 18. Silences the Jews with a Question about John the Baptist's Authority, ver. 23. Shows by the Similitude of two Sons, that the Jews were worse than the Gentiles, ver. 28. The Parable of the Vineyard let out to Husbandmen, ver. 33. The Pharisees Indignation at it, ver, 45.

I. NOW when Jesus and his Disciples drew nigh to Jerusalem, and were come as far as Bethphage, at the foot of the Mount of Olives; Jesus knowing that the appointed time of his Sufferings approach'd sought now no longer to conceal himself, but resolv'd to enter publickly into Jerusalem.

2. Calling therefore two of his Disciples to him, he fent them into the neighbouring Village, faying; go and take the Ass and Colt, which ye shall find tied up in a Corner of the Street,

and bring them hither to me.

3. And if any Man ask you, What you have to do with them; fay, The Mafter wants them; and the Divine Providence shall so order the circumstances of things, that at that Answer they shall be willing to let you have them.

4. (All this Jesus did, that in Him might be fulfille i these Prophecies:

A ND when they drew nightunto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the Village over against you, and strait-way ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man fay ought unto you, ye shall fay, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will fend them.

4 All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was fpoken by the Prophet, faying,

5 Tell

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and fitting upon an ass, and a colt the fole of an ass.

6 And the difciples went, and did as Jefus commanded

them.

I.

ders

ions

18.

ifts

ons,

28.

ver.

vhen

rew

lem,

e to

othe

ives,

two

unto

the

rainst

-way

n ais

with

, and

o me.

man

you,

Lord

hem;

y he

was

night

vhich

y the

g, Tell 7 And brought theafs, and the colt, and put on them their cloaths, and they fet him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude fpread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes, that went before, and that followed, cried, faying, Hofanna to the fon of David: bleffed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hofannah, in the highest.

ro And when he was come into Jerufalem, all the city was moved, faying,

Who is this?

11 And the multitude faid, This is Jesus, the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

5. Say ye to the Daughter of Sion, Behold, thy Saviour cometh, Esai. 62.

11. And, behold, thy King cometh unto thee, ---- lowly, and riding upon an Ass, and upon a Colt the Foal of an Ass. Zech. 9. 9.)

6. Accordingly the two Disciples went into the Village, and did and said as Fesus commanded them, and found all things succeed as he had

foretold them.

7. And they brought the Ass and her Colt, and spread their Cloaths upon them, and set *Jesus* upon the Colt thus clad; and he rode upon it with great lowliness and humble State, from *Beth-phage* to *Jerusalem*.

8. And the Multitude that came with him, ftrew'd the way before him, fome with their Cloaths, and others with Boughs of Trees, as at a Solemn Festival, or the Triumphal Entrance of a great

Prince.

9. And the People before and behind cried; God preserve and prosper the Kingdom of the Messiah: Blessed is he that is fent by God, to Instruct, Heal and Govern his People: Peace and Glory and Dominion be with him.

10. And when he entred into Ferufalem with this folemn Pomp and joyful Acclamations of the People, the whole City was put into a fudden Commotion, and every body enquir'd; Who is this that cometh with fuch State and

Pomp?

11. And the Multitude that came along with him, answered; This is Fessis, that great Prophet of Nazareth, the Fame of whose Doctrine and Miracles hath so long been spread through all the Nation.

K 4

12.

Colt, went into the Temple. And when he came into the outer Court, which is the Court of the Gentiles, he found it like a Market, filled with Money-Changers Stalls, and Sellers of Cattle and Doves, and the like; who fat there under pretence of having these things near at hand for the convenience of those that came up to Sacrifice: But Jesus clear'd the Place, and turn'd them all out, saying:

13. This Place was delign'd, not for a Place of Merchandife, but for the Service of God; that the devout Proselytes of the Gentiles, who are not admitted into the Inner and Holier part of the Temple, might here worthip and Pray to the true God; according as Esaias prophesed (Esai. 56. 7.) that the Temple of God should be an House of Prayer for all People. But now ye have most profanely turned it into a Receptacle of Thieves, a Place of Covetousness, Extortion, and Cheating.

14. ¶ Now while Jesus tarried in the Court of the Temple, many blind and lame Men, who had heard the Fame of his former Miracles, resorted

to him; and he healed them all.

15. But when the Chief Priests, and Jewish Doctors, saw these wonderful Works; instead of being convinced thereby to Repentance, they were only silled with envy, and enraged against him; and hearing all the People admiring and applauding him, and even the very Children in the Temple making joyful Acclamations to him, as Messiah or King; they were in great indignation.

16. And they faid to Fesus, Do you not hear what these Children say? Do

12 ¶ And Jefus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers and the seats of them that sold doves.

13 And faid unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves.

14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David, they were fore displeased.

16 And faid unto him, Hearest thou thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

f

f

rs

to

n,

be

of

ve

of

ind

me

em-

aled

the

and

on-

that

chil-

the

ring,

Son

were

un-

arest

thou

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungred.

19 And when he faw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and faid unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And prefently the figtree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the sigtree withered a-

way!
21 Jesusanswered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have saith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the sig-tree, but also if ye shall say

you think it fit, that these who understand nothing, should be suffer'd to make such shouting? Fesus answer'd, yea; If you who ought to shew forth the Praises of God, will through envy and malice resuse to do it, God will raise up others to gloriste his Name, and (as the Scripture saith, Psal. 8. 2.) even out of the Mouths of Babes and Sucking Children, he will perfect Praise.

17. Then leaving them in their Rage and Envy, he retired out of the City, as far as *Bethany*, and there continued all Night.

18. ¶ The next Morning he returned again to *Jerusalem*: And as he was in the way, he grew hungry.

19. And feeing a Fig-tree a little way off, he went up to it, feeking for Fruit; but finding it Barren, and having nothing but Leaves, he curfed it, faying, Let no Fruit grow on thee for ever: Intimating to his Disciples by this visible Similitude, that the Jewish Nation, having now only a formal Profession of Religion, and not bringing forth the Fruitthereof, should suddenly be Curfed and Rooted out.

20. Accordingly the next day, passing that way, they found the Fig-tree withered and dried up from the Roots: And the Disciples seemed surprised, and wonder'd at the suddenness of its being perished and dead.

21. But Jesus said to them; Do ye wonder at this, as such a strange and extraordinary thing? Verily I tell you, If ye do but firmly believe and trust in the Power of God, ye shall be able to do things as much greater than this, as removing a Mountain and throwing

throwing it into the Sea, is greater than causing a little Tree to wither.

22. And whatsoever ye shall ask of God in order to confirm your Doctrine and Ministry, with stedsast Faith, without Doubt and Wavering; he will enable you to perform.

23. ¶ After this, Jesus went into the Temple; and as he was teaching the People, the Chief Priests and Elders came to him and said; By what Authority do you undertake these things? You enter into the City with Pomp and Noise, like some great Person; you turn the Trading People out of the Court of the Temple, as if you were Governour of the Place; and you teach here publickly in the Temple, as if you were appointed to do so by publick Authority; Pray, who gave you Commission and Authority to do all these things?

24. Jesus, knowing their Malice, and that they who were not at all convinced by his Doctrine and Miracles, would much less be moved by his bare affirming in a direct Answer that he was authorized and sent by God; chose rather to silence them by retorting upon them another Question, after this manner; I will also, saith he, ask you one Question, which if you can answer me, then I also will tell you by what Authority I do these things.

Preached and Baptized, did he do this by God's appointment? Or, was it only a humane Contrivance? Then the Chief Priests, reasoning among themselves, that if they should say John's Baptism was by God's appointment, then Fosses would accuse them for not hearkning to John's Preaching, and not believing the Testimony which he gave

unto this mountain, Be thou remov'd, and be thou cast into the Sea; it shall be done.

22 And all things whatfoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

23¶ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority dost thou these things? And who gave thee this authority?

24 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto
them, I alfo will ask
you one thing,
which if ye tell me,
I in like wife will
tell you by what authority I do these
things.

of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

26 But if we shall fay, Of men;

we

### Chap. XXI.

we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.

1

1

e

e

ef

S

e

15

d,

0

n-

to

sk

g, ne, ill

u-

ese

m

ce

ea-

nd

ith

ıg,

m

ay

lid

eve

we

n;

we

27 And'they anfwered Jefus, and faid, We cannot tell. And he faid unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what think you? A certain man had two fons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He answer'd and faid, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the fecond, and faid likewife. And he answered and faid, I go, fir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his Fa-

### St. MATTHEW.

concerning Jesus; and that on the other side, it they should say John's Baptism was only a humane Contrivance, then they should greatly enrage the People, who all believed John to be a Prophet sent by God: Reasoning, I say, thus among themselves, they resolved not to determine on either side.

27. They replied therefore to Jesus, that they could not tell. And Fesus then in like manner, to Them; neither do I, says he, tell you, what Authority I have to do these things. Which furprizing Question and Anfwer, as it filenc'd and greatly confounded these malicious Scribes and Elders, containing a fecret Conviction and Reproof of their unreasonable unbelief in rejecting John the Baptist; fo it also at the same time made apparent the reasonableness of Christ's not returning a positive Answer to their Question; it being evident, that they who believed not John the Baptist, whom yet they dare not expresly deny to be fent from God, would much less have believed Fesus's plain Assertion of his own Divine Authority.

28. ¶ When Jesus had thus silenced the Chief Priests and Elders, he proceeded to hint to them, by a severe Parable, the Justice of God in utterly Rejecting Them with all their Pretences of Religion, and receiving in their stead the Penitent Gentiles. What think you? faid he. A certain Man had two Sons; and he commanded them both to go work in his Vineyard.

29 & 30. The one said, he would not go, but he repented and went: The other said, he would go, but went not.

31. Which of these two, think you, was the most obedient Son? They answered;

on

th

th

fwered; He that faid he would not go, but repented and went. Even fo, reply'd fesus, the Publicans and Harlots and Heathens, who have formerly indeed been great Sinners, but Repent now and Obey the Gospel, are accepted and rewarded by God; while ye Priests and Elders and Teachers of the fews, who pretend to be the peculiar People of God, and make a great external show of Religion, do really disobey his Commandments, and reject his Gospel, and shall be utterly and finally rejected by him.

32. For John the Baptist was sent to you from God, to preach to you the necessity of Repentance and Obedience: And the Publicans indeed, and Harlots, believed him and Repented: But ye, to whom he was primarily sent, neither believed him at first; neither, after the Example of these Penitent Sinners, did ye afterwards Repent.

33. ¶ Again, Another Parable spake Fesus unto them, to the same import, saying; A certain Man planted a Vineyard, and furnished it with all things necessary for its Fruitfulness, Ornament, and Defense; and then travelling himself into a far Country, be let it out to Husbandmen: Thus God delivered the Law to his peculiar People the Jews, with great present Advantages, and Promises of suture Blessings.

34 & 35. Now when the time of Vintage drew nigh, the Owner sent Servants to the Husbandmen, to receive the Fruit of the Vineyard; but the Husbandmen abused his Servants, and beat some of them, and slew others: Thus God expecting from the Jews, to whom he had given his Law, the

ther? They fay unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

32 For John came unto you in the way of righteoufnels, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him. And ye when ye had feen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

33 ¶ Hear another parable: There was a certain housholder which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into afar countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he fent his fervants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the hufbandmen took his fervants, and beat

one

one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he fent other fervants, mo then the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he fent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But when the husbandmen faw the fon, they faid among themfelves, This is the heir, come, let us killhim, and let us feize on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vine-yard, and slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

Fruits of Holiness and Obedience to his Commands, sent to them his *Prophets* to remind them of their Duty, and to encourage them to Obedience; but they misus'd the Prophets, and perfecuted and slew them.

36. Again, The Master sent other and more Servants, to receive the Fruits of his Vineyard; but the Husbandmen Rebelled, and slew Them also: So God continued to send more Prophets to the Jews, to endeavour to reclaim them, and exhort them to Repentance, but Them also they persecuted and killed.

37. Last of all, he sent unto them his own Son, thinking that surely they would reverence his Son: Thus at last God sent his Son into the World, that if there were any means left of reducing the Jews to Repentance, they might be convinced at least by the Miracles and Authority of Christ.

38 & 39. But the Husbandmen, thinking that if they destroyed this Son and Heir of their Master, they should be disturbed no more in their unjust detaining the Possession; rose up against Him also, and slew him: Thus the Fews, after all the Indignities which they had offered to God's Messengers the Prophets, were to add this at last, to fill up the measure of their Iniquity, that they should also put to Death the Son of God; casting him out of the Church, who was the Foundation of it, and the Author of all God's Blessings to it.

40. When therefore, said Jesus, the Master of the Vineyard returns, what do you think will be do to these wicked Husbandmen? That is, when the time of God's executing Judgment shall come, what Punishment will be inslict upon these incorrigible Jews?

41. The

20. 16.

Chap. XXI.

br

fr

fte

ke

fo

W

po

Pl

hi

pe

fo

01

th

ca

fo

41. The Chief Priests and Elders, not yet understanding that this was the true intent of the Question, anfwered; He will destroy without Mercy those wicked Husbandmen, and let out his Vineyard to others who will ferve him more faithfully: By which Answer they unawares gave Judgment against themselves with their own Mouths, that it was just for God to destroy the Fews, and reveal his Will to another People, who would obey it more fincerely.

42. Jesus replied; Ye have judged rightly; Even thus will God deal with you. And when the Chief of the Fews, perceiving now whereto the Parable tended, would have recall'd + Luke their words, and faid, + God forbid; Fesus added and said, Nay, thus it must certainly be; For doth not the Scripture fay, (Pfal. 118. 22.) The stone which the builders refused, become the head stone of the Corner? That is; Christ, the Messiah, whom the Fews rejected, shall \* receive and unite the Gentiles to his Church, as a principal Corner-stone unites and links the two fides of a Building together.

43. Affuredly therefore it shall come to pass, that you Fews shall be no longer the peculiar People of God; but he will entrust the Gentiles with the Revelation of his Will, and make such other Nations partakers of his Covenant

41 They fay unto him, He will miferably destroy those wicked men, and willlet out his vineyard unto other hufbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their feafons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did yenever read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the fame is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

43 Therefore fay I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation

bring-

<sup>\*</sup> That Christ's being the Chief Corner-stone, signifies not only his being Head of the Church, to which Sense it seems to be applied, Acts 4. 11. but that it also fignifies his Uniting the Gentiles to the Church, is evident from Eph. 2. 20. compared with the foregoing and following Verses; and That Sense seems to fit much better in this place.

bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whofoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomfoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

S

nd n

nne ne ed

g

46 But when they fought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

and Promises, as will make a better use of them than you have done; bringing forth the Fruits of Holiness, Righteousness, and Peace.

44. And this great and general Revelation of the Will of God by the Messiah, being the last Discovery that he will ever make to Mankind; whoever shall stumble and be offended at any part of it, or behave himself in any wise unworthily of it, shall be severely punished: But he that shall utterly and finally reject it, or behave himself so as to deserve the utmost effect of the Wrath which it reveals and brings along with it, shall be misseably and utterly destroyed.

45. ¶ All these Sayings, the Chief Priests and Pharisees at length perceived plainly to be directed against

them

46. And falling into a great rage, they were even ready to apprehend fesus; But they were afraid the People would rescue him, who all look'd upon him to be a great Prophet, sent from God; and therefore for that time they forbore.

CHAP.

h

ItI

1

#### CHAP. XXII.

The Parable of the Marriage of the King's Son, ver. 1. The Calling of the Gentiles, ver. 9. The Punishment of wicked Christians, ver. 12. Of paying Tribute to Casar, ver. 15. The Sadducees confuted, and the Resurrection proved, ver. 23. Which is the greatest Commandment, ver. 34. The Pharifees silenced with a Question about Christ's being David's Son, ver. 41.

I. [ ] PON another occasion Jesus fpake again in Parables, reprefenting the State of the Gospel by way of Comparison or Similitude, saying:

2. A certain King made a great Feast at the Marriage of his Son: Thus God at the fending his Son into the World, revealed the gracious Terms of the Gospel, and invited Men to embrace the advantagious Conditions of that New Covenant.

3. And when the Feast was ready, the King fent his Servants, to call those that had been invited; but they refused to come: Thus Christ, during his Continuance here upon Earth, fent forth his Apostles to preach the Gospel to the Jews, who were the peculiar People of God, and who had before been admonished of the Coming of the Messiah, by the Prophets, by John the Baptist, and by Jesus himself: But they rejected this gracious Offer of the Gospel.

4. Again he fent other Servants, faying; Tell those that are invited, that my Feast is now ready, and that all thinge are prepared, and bid them hasten hither: Thus Christ, after his

A ND Jefus and fpake unto them again by parables, and faid,

2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his fon,

2 And fent forth his fervants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he fent forth other fervants, faying, Tell them which are bidden: Be-

hold,

### Chap. XXII.

hold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

I.

of

ar,

ro-

er.

f's

an-

and

1 a-

les,

om

un-

ing,

nar-

orth

call

bid-

ing:

not

fent

fer-

Tell

are

Be-

hold,

1,

But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise.

6 And the remnant took his fervants, and entreated them fpitefully, and flew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he fent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.

8 Then faith he to his fervants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Goye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

10 So those fervants went out into the high-ways, and gathered together all

## St. MATTHEW.

Refurrection and Ascension, sent forth his Apostles again, and other Disciples, instructed and affisted with greater measures of the Spirit, to preach to the Fews that all things were now accomplished, that the Kingdom of the Mesfiah or the Gospel-Covenant was established, and to invite them to come in and embrace it.

5 & 6. But the Guests still refused to come, going every one about his own business; and some were so ungrateful, as even to abuse and kill the Servants that were fent to call them: the Fews still rejected the repeated Offers of the Gospel, preferring the advantages of this Life to the hopes of a future; and going on obstinately in their own Way, and even perfecuting and flaying the Disciples that were sent to preach to them.

But when the King heard this he was greatly incensed, and sent out his Army, and destroyed those ungrates ful Men that murdered his Servants; and he burnt their City: Thus God, highly provoked at the incorrigible obstinacy of the Jews, sent at last the Roman Army upon them, and destroyed the City of Ferusalem and their whole Nation.

8 & 9. Then he sent out Servants again, saying; The Guests that were invited, were not worthy to come to my Feast; Go therefore into the high-ways, and invite such as you meet, and urge them to come in: Thus God, rejecting the Fews for their impenitence and unbelief, commanded the Gospel to be preached to the Gentiles.

10. Accordingly the Servants went out, and invited all they met, both good and bad, and the room was filled with guests:

Chap. XXII.

guests: Thus the Disciples of Christ preached the Gospel to the Gentiles; and they believed and received it, and were admitted into the Church; some of them being good and sincere Christians, others Hypocrites and wicked Men.

his Guests, and saw a Man among them not having on a Wedding-garment: Thus God sees some in the Church, who professing themselves to be Christians, yet obey not the Gospel, but live unworthily of it.

on Examination, had nothing to say in excuse of his neglect, the King commanded him to be turned out of doors into the dark: Thus wicked Christians, who profess the Gospel, but obey it not; having nothing to plead in excuse for themselves, shall be separated by God from among the Faithful, and be cast into the Regions of Eternal Darkness, most remote from the Happiness of Heaven.

14. For many indeed hear and receive the Gospel, and many there are that profess themselves Christians; but there are but few who live suitably to that holy Profession, and approve themselves before God, so as to be thought worthy of its Reward.

15. ¶ All these Parables the Pharifees heard: And though these Discourses referred to many things, which at that time were not yet accomplished, so that the Pharisees could not fully understand them; yet in general they perceived, that all these Similitudes were directed against Them. Resolving therefore, some way or other to destroy Jesus; and seeing the People had at present II ¶ And when the king came in to fee the guefts, he faw there a man which

had not on a wed-

ding-garment:

di

H

M

th

ar

th

an

re

fo

edi

ter

po

ttil

the

hir

unt

isti

per

hin

fait

Re

unt

12 And he faith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then faid the king to the fervants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness: there shall weeping and gnashing of teeth

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharifees, and took counfel how they might intangle him in bis talk.

16 And

out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

h

n

a

3

1-

10

s,

nd

m

m

s:

ng

th

re

re

ent

nd

w

gle

And

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Casar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him a peny.

20 And he faith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They fay unto him, Cæfars. Then faith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæfar, the things which are

fuch an opinion of his being a great Prophet, that they durst not venture to apprehend him by force; they contrived, if possible, to infinare him in his Talk, so as to draw him in to say something that might give offence to the People.

16. Sending therefore some of their own Disciples, together with some of the followers of *Herod*, they instructed them to assault him with a Shew of great Honour and Esteem, saying: Master, We believe you to be a true and sincere Teacher of the Law of God, and that you have so much Courage and Freedom, as not to flatter any Man, nor be moved by any Fear or Affection to conceal the Truth: We desire therefore you would solve us this Doubt.

17. Is it lawful for the Jews, who are the peculiar People of God, and under his immediate Government, to pay Tribute to Cæfar, and to submit to the Authority of the Romans; or not?

18. By this Question they hoped to draw him into such a Snare, that either he might offend the People; and seem to flatter the Roman Emperor in opposition to the Liberty and Religion of the Jews, if he should say Tribute ought to be paid; or that he might offend the Romans, if he should say it ought not. But Jesus knowing this their Cunning and Malice, said; Wherefore do ye tempt me, ye Hypocrites? I am aware of your wicked and deceitful Intentions.

19, 20 & 21. And calling for a piece of the Money wherewith the Romans Tax used to be paid, he asked them, Whose Image and Inscription was upon

L 2 it

(

tl

f

t

Cæfars: and unto God the things that are Gods.

it? Which when they owned to be  $C\omega far's$ ,  $\mathcal{F}e fus$  replied; Then ought ye to give to  $C\omega far$ , what ye acknowledge to belong to him; and so far submit your selves to the Government ye are under, as is consistent with Religion and the Law of God.

22. Hereupon they departed from him, admiring the Prudence of his Anfwer, and despairing to obtain any ad-

vantage against him.

† See Jose who believed that † the Soul of Man phus of the perishes at Death, and that there is no Jewish Resurrection nor Future State of Re-Wars, lib. wards and Punishments in another 1. C. 22. World, came to Jesus, and put a case to him, saying:

24. Master, Moses commanded, that if a Man die without Children, his Brother should marry his Wife, to con-

tinue his Name and Family.

25. Now there happened to be Seven Brothers, whereof the first married a Wife, and dying without Children, left his Wife to the second.

26 & 27. In like manner the fecond married her, and died without Children; and the third; and in short, they all seven married her, and died without Children; and the Woman died last.

28. Now if there be a future State, as you teach, and another Life after this; whose Wife of the seven must this Woman then be? for they all alike married her.

29. Jesus replied; Ye talk very ignorantly; not understanding the true meaning of the Scriptures, nor having a right Sense of the Greatness of the Power of God.

heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 The fame day came to him the Sadducees, which fay there is no refurrection, and asked

him,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us feven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

26 Likewise the fecond also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman diedalso.

28 Therefore in the refurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and faid unto

### Chap. XXII.

them, Ye do err, not knowing the fcriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the refurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the Angels of God in heaven.

ls,

nd

nt

ne

he

ich

ur-

ced

ter,

nan

hil-

her

ife,

un-

here

ven

the

had

deving wife

the

the the

e fe-

of all

alfo.

e in

tion,

all she

? for

wer-

unto them, 31 But as touching the refurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was fpoken unto you by God, faying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Ifaac, and the God of Jacob; God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were aftonished at his doctrine.

### St. MATTHEW.

30. For in that future State of Happiness, to which the Just shall be raised; where there shall be no more Mortality, which Marriage was Instituted to supply; there will be no more need of any such thing as Marriage. Neither shall that suture State, be like the present life of Men on Earth; But it shall be Glorious and Spiritual, as is now the Life of Angels in Heaven.

31 & 32. And that there shall be such a future State and another Life after this, ye might have collected even from God's stiling himself to Moses, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Facob, long after the Death of these Patriarchs; (Exod. 3. 6.) For since 'tis plain these Holy Men did not receive the full reward of their Piety in this World, God could not have called himself their God, but only because there is a future State wherein they shall be rewarded, and \* another Life after this.

33. When the People heard this, they were greatly amaz'd at the readinessand excellency of *Jefus*'s Answers, with which he thus effectually filenced all his Adversaries.

<sup>\*</sup> The Word ἀνάσωσις properly fignifies a future Life in general, and so the strength of our Saviour's Argument is clear and evident. But tho' we should understand the word strictly of the Resurrection of the Body, the Argument would yet be good: For since the Sadducees denied the Resurrection of the Body, not because they thought it impossible for the Body to be rais'd, but only because they thought the Soul perish'd at Death, and that there was no future State at all; our Saviour by proving in general the certainty of a Life to come, takes away the whole foundation of their Objection. Besides; the separate State of the Soul, is not a state of perfect Happiness, but merely of Expectation.

34. ¶ But when the Pharifees heard that the Sadducees were put to filence, they gathered together again to dispute with Jesus.

35. And one of them, being a Scribe

+ See Mar. or Interpreter of the Law, and † obferving that Jesus gave wise and prudent Answers, desired to try him further, and put this Question to him,
saying:

\* See Mar. principal part of the Law? The \* Ce-12.33. remonial, or the Moral?

37. Fesus answer'd: To love God

fincerely, entirely and constantly; 38. This is the first and greatest Commandment, which ought above all things to be religiously observ'd.

39. And the next is like to it in Excellence and Dignity, namely, to love your Neighbour as your felf, and to do to all Men as you would they should do to you.

40. These are the two great Rules which contain the whole Sum of true Religion and Righteousness: These are what Nature and the Reason of Things teach: And these are what all God's Revelations to Mankind in the Law and the Prophets, are design'd to explain and inforce.

41. ¶ And while the Pharisees continued to be gathered together about fesus, disputing with him, and putting Questions to him, to tempt and insnare him; fesus on the other side put a Question to them, saying,

42. What think you of the Messias, whom ye expect according to the Promises made by God in the Prophets? Of what Family, and whose Son do ye find in Scripture that he ought to be? The Pharises answered, He must be the Son of Pavid.

### Chap. XXII.

the

do

cal

ing

fai

Sit

ha

th

fo

ca

is

hi

th

(fi

25

qu

C

h

34 ¶ But when the Pharifees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to filence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the Law?

37 Jefus faid unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy foul, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the fecond is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy felf.

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

41 ¶ While the Pharifees were gathered together, Jefus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? they say unto him, The son of David?

43 He

# Chap. XXIII.

I,

ien

iad

nad

to

ere

1

im

pt-

ng,

ich

m-

the

nto

ove

od

rt,

oul,

hy

the

m-

nd

OU

sh-

VO

nd

he

je-

hat ft?

ie?

m,

He

2

of

43 He faith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The LORD faid unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footftool?

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his Son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any more questions.

### St. MATTHEW.

43. Jesus replied: How then comes it to pass, that David writing prophetically and by the Inspiration of the Spirit of God, acknowledges the Messiah as his Superior, and calls him Lord, saying; (Pfal. 110. 1.)

44. God said unto my Lord the Messiah; Take thou all Power, Dominion, and Authority, until all thy Enemies be made subject unto thee.

45. If the Meffiah be David's Son, why doth David thus call him his Lord, and acknowledge him as his Superior?

that he who fprung from the Family of David in his Humane Nature, was infinitely fuperior to David in his Divine Nature; were not able to return Jesus any Answer to this Question. And finding that they were far inferior to him in Wisdom and Knowledge, and that they could not stand against the Strength and Clearness of his Discourses, they retired from him, and ventured no more to tempt him with ensnaring Questions.

#### CHAP. XXIII.

Christ openly reproveth the Hypocrisie, and vain Traditions and false Doctrines of the Pharisees, ver. 1. Lamenteth over Jerusalem, and foretelleth its Destruction, ver. 37.

THEN fpake Jefus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

1. A Fter this, Jesus spake to the People that were gather'd together about him, and to his Disciples, concerning the Pharisees, saying,

L 4 2. The

Chap. XXIII.

2 Saying, The
Scribes and the Pho

2. The Jewish Doctors and Pharifees, though they be Hypocrites, and Covetous, and Vain-glorious Men; yet since they succeed *Moses* and the Prophets in being Teachers and Expounders of the Law of God, ye ought to hearken and attend to their Teaching.

and attend to their Teaching.

3. What therefore they Teach you out of the Law of God, and agreeable to it, that hear ye and obey: But imitate not their Example; because their Lives are disagreeable and contrary to

their Doctrine.

4. For they expound the Law in the strictest and severest Sense, and impose upon other Men the utmost rigour of its Precepts; But they themfalves will not take the least pains in practising those great and Moral Duties, which are of the highest importance and

of eternal obligation.

only that they may be observed and applauded by Men; and neglecting all other things, they take care to chuse to be always doing such Works, as are most apt to be seen publickly, and may best serve this vain-glorious purpose. To obey the Moral Law of God in their Lives, they are little solicitous: But pieces of Parchment with Sentences of the Law written upon them, and Fringes for an external show of Respective Number 1882.

15. 38. / ligion, they will than other Men.

6. If they be invited any whither to a Feast, they foolishly strive to have the upper Hand; and in the Churches place themselves ambitiously in the highest Seats, that they may look greater, and seem to have some preheminence over other Men.

2 Saying, The Scribes and the Pharifees fit in Mofes feat.

3 All therefore what foever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not.

4 For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not movethem with one of their singers.

5 But all their works they do for to be feen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synago-gues.

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But be ye not called Rabbi: for one is your Mafter, even Chrift, and all ye are brethren.

re

id

b-

of

eir

ly,

nd

nd

rn,

on

but

vill ith

rs.

neir

for en:

oad

ies,

oor-

gar-

the

ns at chief ago-

Apd

9 And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your father which is in heaven.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, even Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.

7. In the open Streets they love to receive the Praises and Compliments of Men, and are wonderfully proud to hear the People with Reverence and Respect call them *Masters* and *Fathers*, Heads of Sects and Authors of Doctrines.

8. But let it not be so among you my Disciples: Let no man among you contend for Superiority or Precedence: For ye have one Supreme Head, which is Christ; and ye, as Brethren, ought to condescend to one another with mutual Charity and Respect in all things.

9. Let no Man among you \* be call'd Father, or Head of a Sect, as the chief Teachers among the Jews love to assume to themselves the name of † Rabbi or Fathers: For ye have one Father and Supreme Teacher which is God; and ye as Children ought to strive to exceed one another in nothing but Humility and Love.

10. Neither let any one among you arrogate to himself the Title of *Master*, or Author of a Doctrine: For ye have one Supreme Master, which is Christ; and all ye, as Fellow-Servants, ought to assist one another without envy, contention, or pride.

11. Even he that for order fake shall have a higher Office or greater Dignity in the Church than another, let him not be proud and imperious upon that account; but let him be so much the more hum-

+ 127 and 384 the Principal of a School, or Author of a Postrine.

ble,

<sup>\*</sup> Πατέρα με καλίσητε θμών ἐπι τῆς γῆς. Call no one among you, Father upon Earth. So the Words feem most naturally to figns e.

ble, and communicative, and ready to affift others, by how much he is intrusted with greater power and opportu-

nities of doing good.

12. For whosoever is proud and arrogant, shall be brought down and humbled: But he that is humble and modest, and thinks lowly of himself, shall be esteem'd worthy to be exalted both by God and Men.

both by God and Men.

13. Then Jesus turning himself to the Jewish Doctors, and Pharisees, added and said: Wo unto you hypocritical Teachers and Pharisees; For ye, who pretend to be Interpreters of the Law, and ought to instruct Men in the Knowledge and Practise of true Religion, do on the contrary by your vain Traditions and wicked Lives, hinder and pervert them. Ye neither follow true Virtue and Piety your selves; nor suffer others, who are willing, so to do.

Teachers and Pharifees: For ye break the Moral and Eternal Law of God by your Rapin and Extortion, oppreffing the Widows and Fatherless, whom God has commanded you to support; and think to hide your Covetousness under the specious formality of long Prayers and great strictness in the external Parts of Religion: Therefore ye

shall be doubly punish'd by God.

Teachers and Pharifees: For ye pretend great Zeal, and spare no pains or cost, and leave no means unattempted, to convert a Stranger to your Religion: But when you have so done, you are so far from instructing him in true Virtue and Piety, that you corrupt his natural Notions of Good

12 And whosoever shall exalt himfelf, shall be abased; and hethatshallhumblehimself, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But wo unto you scribes and pharisees, hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring, to go in.

14 Wo unto you feribes and pharifees, hypocrites, for ye devour widows loufes, and for a pretence make long prayers; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

fcribes and pharifees, hypocrites; for ye compass fea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than your selves.

16 Wo

ye blind guides, which fay, Whofoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but who foever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debter.

17 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that fanctifieth the gold.

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that fanctifieth the gift?

rs

a

g

ne

U

es,

ye

nd

e-

15

m

he

an

70

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whofo fhall fwear by the temple, fweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that fhall fwear by heaven, fweareth by the throne of God, and by him that fitteth thereon. and Evil, with false Doctrines and vain Schemes of Religion, and make him even much worse than he was before.

16. Wo unto you, ye ignorant and fuperstitious Guides; who tell the People, that if they swear only by the Temple, they may be discharg'd from the Obligation of that Oath; but if they swear by the Gold that is consecrated to God in the Temple, that they are then indeed strongly obliged by their Oath, and cannot be discharged.

17. Ye foolish and perverse Teachers: What an absurd and senseless distinction is this! As if the Gold were more facred than the Temple of God, by which the Gold it self is made holy.

18. Again; ye teach, that if a Man fwears only by the Altar, he may be discharg'd from the Obligation of that Oath; but if he swears by the Oblation that is offered upon the Altar, that he is then indeed strongly obliged by his Oath, and cannot be discharged.

19. Now what a foolish and perverse distinction is this! As if the Offering were more Sacred, than the Altar of God, by which the Offering it self is

made Holy.

20. In reality therefore, to swear by the Altar of God, is the very same thing as to swear by the Oblation that is offered thereupon, and by him to whom the Offering is made.

21. And to fwear by the *Temple*, is the very fame thing, as to fwear by

God whose Temple it is.

22. And to swear by Heaven, is the very same thing, as to swear by the Throne of God, and consequently by God himself. So that in short, what Thing soever you swear by, it is the very same thing as swearing by God, whose Creature that I ling is. 23.

23. Again, wo unto you, hypocritical Teachers, and Pharisees. For ye are fuperstitiously scrupulous and precise in things of smaller moment, in little external Rites, in things of trifling niceness and dispute: But the things of Great and Eternal Obligation, Justice and Equity, Mercy and Charity, Faithfulness and Truth towards God and Men, these things ye wholly slight and neglect: Whereas on the contrary, though those other smaller things ought not indeed in their due place to pals altogether unregarded, yet these great and important Duties ought certainly to be Mens principal and first Care.

24. But ye, as I faid, (ignorant and perverse Teachers) stick at the smallest things, and neglect the greatest: Just as if a Man should refuse to drink his Wine till he had strained it, to take out a little Gnat; but should without scruple swallow in it some other thing

ten times as big.

25. Wo unto you, hypocritical Teachers and Pharifees. For as if a Man should be very nice to clean the outside of his Cups and Dishes, but should take no care at all to keep the inside of them free from dirt and filth: Even so ye are wonderful diligent, to appear strict in the observance of the outward and formal Ceremonies of Religion; but the Thoughts of your Hearts and the Secret Actions of your Lives, are full of Iniquity and Uncleanness.

26. Nay, ye Fools and Blind; But let a Man rather be follicitous in the first place, that the thoughts of his Heart be fincere and pure, and the actions of his Life honest and good, and then his sobservance of external Rites may be agreeable and comely:

23 Wo unto you feribes and pharifees, hypocrites; for ye pay tithe of mint and anife, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not leave the other undone.

24 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Wo unto you fcribes and pharifees, hypocrites; for ye make clean the outfide of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

Pharifee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you fcribes and pharifees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited fepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanness.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrify and

d

ou

ri-

or

he

up

er,

are

nd

ind

irst

hin

ter,

ot

ean

We

iniquity. 29 Wo unto you scribes and pharifees, hypocrites; because ye build the

tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the

righteous,

30 And say, if we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your felves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your

fathers.

Even as the infide of Pots and Difhes ought always first to be cleansed; and then a proportionable care to keep their outsides clean, may look decent and neat.

27 & 28. Wo unto you, hypocritical Teachers and Pharifees. Ye may for your hypocrify be well compared to the Sepulchres of the Dead. For as Graves either \* appear not at all, or \* See Lnk. perhaps are covered with Stones 11.44. whited and clean on the outfide; but within they are full of Dead Mens Bones and Corruption: So ye outwardly perhaps make no bad appearance before Men, but seem on the contrary to be holy and religious Perfons; but fecretly and in your Hearts ye are full of all manner of hypocrify and wickedness.

29 & 30. Wo unto you hypocritical Teachers and Pharifees: For, while ye your felves are no less wicked than those who anciently murdered God's Messengers and Prophets, ye pretend to have a great Honour for the Memory of those Prophets, and testify your Respect for the Holy Men of Old, by building and adorning their Tombs; and ye fay, if you had lived in old time, when your Fathers murdered the Prophets, ye, who are their Children, would not have done fo.

31 & 32. Nay verily, but ye are indeed, as ye fay, the Children of those who killed the Prophets; and ye approve your felves their genuine Offspring, by being like them, and imitating their Wickedness; nay, notwithstanding your hypocrify, ye even exceed them in malice, and will fill up the measure of their iniquity.

33. (Ye

33. (Ye obstinate and incorrigible Generation of Vipers: By your hypocrify indeed, you may here escape the punishment of Men; but how will you avoid the future and eternal Judgment

of God?)

34. Ye even exceed, I say, the malice of your Forefathers, and will fill up the measure of their Iniquity. For behold, I send you Prophets and Holy Men, to instruct you in the Doctrine of true Religion; but ye will slay and crucify them, and beat them even in the places of God's publick Worship, and pursue and persecute them from one

City to another.

35. Wherefore I tell you, the punishment that shall be inflicted by Divine Vengeance upon the Men of this present Generation, shall be as great and dreadful, as if not only the Forefathers of this People in their several Generations, but the Men who are now alive had in their own persons been the Murderers of all the Righteous and Good Men, who have been unjustly martyred since the time of Adam to this very day.

36. Affuredly I tell you, and repeat it to you again, that fuch a terrible punishment as this, shall certainly fall upon the Men of this present Genera-

tion.

37. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that wast once the Holy City, and the Beloved of God, but hast since rejected God, and pesecuted his Servants, and slain his Prophets, and continued obstinately impenitent; how often has God tendered to thee the Offers of Pardon and Mercy, and invited thee to Repentance with all the pity and kindness, that a tender Father can shew to

# Chap: XXIII.

33 Yeserpents, ye generation of vipers, how can yes cape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I fend unto you prophets, and wife-men, and fcribes; and fome of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and fome of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and perfecute them from city to city:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36Verily I fay unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation.

Jerufalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together even as a hen gathereth her chickens under ber wings,

de

### Chap. XXIV. St. MATTHEW.

wings, and ye would not!

.

Ŋ

re

0

d

bi

ne

ill

ne

yrm

ou

he ed

m

he as,

as,

e-se

ple

ın-

eſe

me

ti-

m,

hat

ets,

emi

nto

ten

ga-

ren

s 3

her

her

igs,

39 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

32 For I fay unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall fay, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

his most beloved Child! But thou refusedst to hear.

38. Behold **Now** therefore the Time of Mercy is past; and the final Desolation of the City and Temple, with the fearful Destruction of the *Jewish* Nation, is irreversibly decreed by God.

39. And I affure you the time will fpeedily come, and it is now at hand, when ye shall see me no more, till ye shall be forced to own me to be indeed the Messiah, the Son of God with Power.

#### CHAP. XXIV.

Christ foretells the Destruction of Jerusalem, and the End of the World, and warns all Men to watch.

ND Jefus went out, and departed from the temple; and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not beleft here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

3 ¶ And as he fat upon the mount of Olives, the dif-

I. AFTER this, Jesus departed from the Temple; and as he was going out, his Disciples, who had heard him speak of the Desolation of the City and Temple, desired him to observe what a stately and beautiful Structure the Temple was; infinuating as if they thought it pity, that so noble a Building should be so miserably destroyed.

2. But Jesus answered: Do ye admire these things, and look upon them with pity? I tell you again, they shall all be destroyed with such a compleat and utter Desolation, that there shall not be lest so much as one Stone upon another, which shall not be cast down.

3. And when he was come to the Mount of Olives, and was fet down there, his Disciples came to him privately

privately and asked him, faying; When shall these Desolations, and all these strange things, which you have told us of, be accomplished? And by what Signs shall we know, when the Confummation of the present state of Things in the World shall be? And when, and by what Revolutions, the Kingdom of the Messias shall be established?

4. To this general Question, which the Disciples (who had not yet any clear Notion what the State and Duration of the Christian Dispensation was to be) were not capable of proposing more distinctly; Jesus accordingly returned fuch an Answer, as being immediately and properly a Description of the final Destruction of Ferusalem and of the Fewish Nation, which was to be the first establishment of the Kingdom of Christ; might also at the fame time contain an obscure Prophecy of the end of the World. And his Answer was this: Ye are defirous to know the time and manner of my Second appearing, to destroy my Enemies, and to establish the Kingdom of the Messias: But take heed that no Man deceive you, and impose upon you.

5. For many Impostors shall appear, who will pretend to be the Messiah, sent by God to deliver such as will follow them; and they shall shew many wonderful Signs, and shall deceive many.

6. Ye shall also hear of Wars and Tumults, Commotions, Revolutions, Terrors, and Panick Fears; But let not your Minds be disturbed at these things; For many such Calamities as these must happen, before the final and utter

eiples came unto him privately, faying, Tell us when thefe things shall be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus anfwered and faid unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: fee that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come

# Chap. XXIV.

come to pass, but theendisnot yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and pestilences, and earthquakes in diversiplaces.

8 All these are the beginning of sor-

rows.

to

y.

en e?

he

he

an-

uneed

ive

shall

ame,

rist: ma-

fhall

and

rars:

not

or all

must

come

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake.

many be offended; and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

II And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many,

12 And because iniquityshallabound, the love of many shall wax cold.

#### St. MATTHEW.

Destruction of the Fewish Nation; (and in like manner, before the end of the World.)

7. For one Country shall take up Arms against another; and there must be Broils and Commotions, and Civil Wars through the World: And there shall be Famines, and Plagues, and Earthquakes in several parts of the Earth.

8. All these things are but the beginnings of that last and total Destruction, which shall come upon the Nation of the Jews: (And in like manner such Calamities as these, will precede the last Judgment, and the end of the World.)

9. In the mean time ye shall be afflicted, and persecuted even to Death; and both Jews and Gentiles shall hate you for the sake of your professing Christianity.

10. And many Christians, discouraged by these Sufferings and Calamities, shall turn Apostates; and to ingratiate themselves with Unbelievers, shall betray and persecute their Brethren.

11. Many false Teachers also, and Deceivers shall arise; who under pretence of preaching the Gospel, shall seduce many to follow vain and vicious Doctrines; and shall pervert weak Men, in hopes of escaping Persecution, to dissemble or forsake the Truth of Religion.

moved by Unbelievers on the one hand; and the Apostasies, Contentions, and Dissimulation of some Believers on the other hand, will mightily perplex things, and cause great confusion; therefore the Zeal which many others hitherto retained for true Religion, M

re

cl

th

th

no

ba

th

ne

th

th th

el

lie

ar

21

fi

in

1

6

to

will at length cool, and they also will become luke-warm and fearful.

13. But he that under all these Trials and Afflictions, shall continue stedsast and unmoved to the end, in the Profession and Practice of true Religion; shall by the peculiar Providence of God be preserved bere from the extremity of that final Calamity whereby the Jewish Kingdom shall be utterly destroyed; and he shall bereafter inherit Eternal Life.

14. Now during these Calamities and Confusions, the Christians scattered abroad by the Persecution, shall preach the Gospel to the Gentiles. And as soon as the Gospel has been preached, and Churches established by them through the Roman Empire, the Jewish Nation and Polity shall be utterly destroyed with their City and Temple: (And in like manner, when the Christian Religion has made its progress through all the Nations of the Earth, the End of the World shall come.)

15. When therefore ye shall see the Holy City compassed about with Heathen Armies, the Abomination of Defolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, (which, let him that readeth, consider and understand;) that is, when ye shall see Ferusalem besieged by the Romans;

16. Then let them which are in Judea, knowing that the final Defitruction of that Nation is coming, flee for their Lives.

17 to 18. And because this vengeance that shall fall upon the Jews, will be sudden and terrible; therefore let every one that hopes to escape, make such speed in his slight, as not to return home to take any of his Goods with

13 But he that fhallendure unto the end, the fame shall be faved.

14 And this gofpel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witnessunto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standinthe holyplace, (whoso readeth, let him understand.)

16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let him which is on the house-top, not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return

# Chap. XXIV.

return back to take his clothes.

- 19 And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give fuck in thosedays.
- 20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the fabbath-day:
- be great tribulation, fuch as was not fince the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.
- those days should be shortned, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those days shall be shortened.
- 23 Then if any man shall fay unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, believe it not.
- 24 For there shall arise sale Christs, and salse prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.
- 25 Behold, I have told you before.

### St. MATTHEW.

him; but let him flee, as Lot did out of Sodom, without so much as looking back.

- 19. But wo be to them, who through any impediment shall not be in a condition to make a speedy flight, as Women that are with Child, or give Suck.
- 20. Pray ye also that ye may not be forced to flee in the Winter, or on the

\* Sabbath, when either the Season, or \* This the Holiness of the time, may retard feems spoand prevent your escape. ken in con-

21. For the Hardships and Calamities descension of that time, when the Romans shall to the few-over-run the Country, and ferusalem ish Prejudi-shall be besieged by them; will be greater than ever besel any People before, or shall ever happen after.

22. So that if that Tribulation were to be as lasting, as it will be sharp and severe, no one could possibly escape: But for the sake of those Christians who shall at that time be scattered through *Judæa*, God will so order things, that the extremity of the Calamity shall be short, and the City shall quickly be taken.

23. At that time, if any Man shall report that Christ appears in this or that place, to destroy his Enemies, and to deliver his Servants, believe it

24. For there shall arise Impostors and Deceivers, who shall each pretend to be the Messiah, and shall work strange Wonders and Delusions; so as to deceive, not only the unbelieving fews, but, if it were possible, even sincere Christians also.

25. Take heed now, and be not deceived: Behold, I have expresly cautioned and forewarned you.

M 2

26. If

& 24.

## A Paraphrase on

If therefore it shall be reported that Christ appears visibly in the Desert, and is preparing to come and deliver his Servants; regard it not. And if they fay, he is fecretly in any private place, ready to shew himself and appear publickly, give no Credit to it at all.

27 & 28. For as Lightning shineth through all Places in an instant, and as Eagles gather themselves with incredible swiftness to all parts where the Prey is to be found; fo the Power of Christ in destroying his Enemies, shall demonstrate it self evidently through all the Land at once; and Kingdom shall be established, not + See Luk. with Observation in + this or that 17. v. 20, particular place, but by the wonderful 21, 22, 23, Efficacy of the Divine Power it shall appear and prevail through the World, as

> it were in a Moment. 29. For immediately after these fatal Wars, and the Destruction of Ferusalem by the Romans; the whole Fewish Polity, Government, Laws, and Reli-

gion, shall be utterly dissolved.

30 & 31. And then it will become evident, that Fesus was the true and only Messias, and the Fews shall lament and mourn, and be forced to acknowledge the Power, and Glory, and Majefty of Christ; who will then send forth his Ministers among the Gentiles, and will gather into one Body those who believe and obey his Gospel, from among all the Nations of the Earth. (In like manner at the end of the World, after long Persecutions and Afflictions of the and after great Disturbances and Revolutions in all the Nations of the World, Christ will at last appear in the Clouds of Heaven with Power and great Glory; and he will send

## Chapl XXIV.

26 Wherefore, if they shall fay unto you, Behold, he is in the defert, go not forth: behold, he is in the fecret chambers, believe it not.

21

hi

fo

th

pa

tr

bı

ar

fi

tl

a

u

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: fo shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

28 Fer wherefoever the 'arcafe is, there will 'he eagles be gathered toge-

ther.

29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the fun be darkned, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appear the fign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall fee the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

31 And he shall fend his angels with a great found of atrumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the figtree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that fummer is nigh.

33 Solikewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.

34 Verily I fay unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 Heaven and earth shallpassaway, but my words shall not passaway.

ti-

rs,

k-

nc

er

ITS

ea-

ers

nall

nall

he

ea-

hall

nd

in ea-

ver

hall

36 ¶ But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 Butasthedays of Noe were, fo shall forth his Angels through the World, and gather together his Elect; that is, all good Men who have believed and obeyed God, and reward them with Eternal Life.

32 & 33. Now observe and hearken to this Similitude, which I am about to tell you. In the same manner as when ye see the Leaves and tender Buds of a Fig-tree begin to sprout forth, ye know certainly that Summer is coming on: Even so, when ye see these Signs, which I have foretold you, come to pass; ye may know certainly, that the Destruction of Jerusalem, and of the Nation of the Jews, is just at hand.

34. Affuredly Itell you, all the things that I have now declared to you concerning this great Defolation, shall be fulfilled in this present Generation, in the Age of some that are now a-live

35. And fooner shall Heaven and Earth be destroyed, than one Word of what I have foretold you, fall short of being fully accomplish'd.

36. Only as to the exact † Day and Hour, when this final Desolation shall be compleated, God has revealed that neither to Man nor Angel. (And in like manner the Time, when the End of the World and the Last Judgment shall be, God has reserved as a Secret known only to himself.)

37. But this I may tell you, that all these things, which I have now fore-

M 3 warned

<sup>+</sup> It is an extraordinary ingenious Conjecture of Grotius, to make ημέρα ἐκείνη here, opposed to ταῦτα πάντα in v. 34. So that the Sense may be, ταῦτα πάντα, the Destruction of the fews, shall be presently; but ημέρα ἐκείνη, the last day of fudgment, is known to none. Yet the Sense may be carried on entire, without this opposition; as in the Paraphrase.

warned you of, shall come suddenly and very unexpectedly to the generality

of Mankind.

38 & 39. For as in the Days of Noab, Men went on fecure and intent upon their worldly Bufiness, and had no regard to the Preaching of that good Man, till the very Day that the Flood furpriz'd and destroyed them all: So in this Generation the Fews shall go on obstinately in their own Ways, unconcern'd at the Warnings which I and my Disciples give them, till the Romans shall come upon them and destroy them utterly: (And in like manner at the end of the World, Men will be wholly taken up about their Business and their till the Appearance of Pleasures, Christ, and the last Judgment surprize them.)

40 & 41. Yet at these Times God will make very great and remarkable Distinctions of Men. For at the general Desolation of Fudaa, among Men employ'd about the fame Business and feemingly equal in all worldly Concerns, God will by strange Acts of Providence rescue some from this Calamity, wherein the rest shall be left to perish: (And in like manner at the Day of Judgment, there shall be an infinite difference made between Men, whom the

World distinguish'd not at all.)

42. Since therefore these things will certainly be thus, and yet ye know not the time when they will be; it highly concerns you to be very vigilant and watchful, that when these terrible Calamities, (or when Death and Judgment ) shall come upon you, ye may be found in the Number of those, whom God shall think worthy to be rescued or layed.

also the coming of the Son of man be.

Ch

that

of

kno

wat

WOI

WOI

ed,

have

hou

пр.

ye

in f

you

lon

fait

van

Lo

ler to

due

fer

Lo

eth

ing

fha

OV

ev

in

de

to

fe

ar d

4

38 For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entred into theark.

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; fo shallal so the coming of the Son

of man be.

40 Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and theother left.

42 J Watchthere fore, for ye know not what hour your Lorddoth come.

43 But know this, that if the good-man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffer'd his house to be broken up.

ne

id

y

e

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you think not, the son of man cometh.

45 Who then is a faithful and wifefervant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over hishoushold, to give them meat in due season?

46 Bleffed is that fervant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall find so doing.

47 Verily I fay unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil fervant shall fay in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming,

49 And shallbegin to smite bis fellow-fervants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

43. Ye know in other Cases, if a Housholder, for instance, had notice given him that his House was in danger to be robbed in such or such a Night, he would be sure to watch and prevent the Thieves from breaking in.

44. How much more ought ye to be always ready and provided, fince ye know not at what time these terrible Calamities, (or when Death and Judg-

ment) will come?

45. And now who is that faithful and wife Disciple, who being intrusted with the Knowledge of God's Will, or being appointed by him to preach the Gospel and reform others; shall heartily and sincerely, make use of all his Gifts and Opportunities, to the Service of God, and to the best Improvement of himself and others?

46. Bleffed is that Disciple, whom Christ at his Coming shall find thus em-

ploy'd.

47. Affuredly I tell you, as an earthly Master rewards such a faithful Servant with great Honour and Preferment in his Family; so God will reward the Fidelity of such a Disciple with the greatest Degree of Glory, in his Eternal Kingdom.

48 & 49. But if on the contrary, fuch a Disciple as God has entrusted with great Talents, and many Opportunities of doing Good, shall begin to think with himself that God's Judgments are far off, and shall neglect his Duty, and give himself up to Cruelty, Idleness and

Luxury:

## A Paraphrase on

50 & 51. God will furprize such a one in his Security, and unexpectedly cut him off in the midst of his Wickedness; overwhelming him with strange and sudden Judgments here, and assigning him a Portion in Eternal Misery bereafter.

## Chap. XXV.

50 The Lord of that fervant shall comein a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not ware of;

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. fe

#### CHAP. XXV.

The Parable of the wise and foolish Virgins, ver. 1. The Parable of the Talents, ver. 14. A Description of the Last Judgment, ver. 31.

I. A T that Time the State of the Gospel, and the Method of God's dealing with Men, will be such, as may fitly be represented to you by this Similitude. There were ten Virgins, who being invited to a Wedding, took their Lamps in the Night, and went to meet the Bridegroom. Thus the Jews were invited to receive the Gospel, and they all pretended to expect the Messias: And thus those that profess the Name of Christ, make all of them a show of attending upon him, and expecting his Coming.

2. Now five of these Virgins were wise, and five were foolish: Thus some of the Jews embrac'd the Offers of the Gospel, and others rejected them: And thus some of those, who profess themselves Christians, are sincere and hearty; others are merely formal, and Christians only in show.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wife, and five were foolish.

3 They

## Chap. XXV.

2 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them.

4 But the wife took oil in their veffelswith their lamps.

ıt

the

of

ned

ns,

neir

ent

the

nem

five

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all flumbered and flept.

And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

3 Then all those virgins arose, and trimm'dtheir lamps.

## St. MATTHEW.

The foolish Virgins took 3 0 4. their Lamps, without any supply of Oil to maintain them; But the wife took Vessels of Oil with them, to feed their Lamps: Thus those Jews who embraced the Gospel, took the Warning which Christ gave them to provide for their Escape at the Destruction of Ferusalem; but the others neglected it: And thus wife and fincere Men live according to their Profession, and by Habits of Piety and Virtue lay up in store for themselves a good Foundation of Happiness against the Time to come; But others, who are merely formal, content themselves with a bare external Profesfion, and make no Provision of good Works against the Day of Accounts.

5. Now while the Bridegroom tarried, they all sumbered and slept: Thus in the Interval before the Destruction of Ferusalem, both the Christians as well as the Jews were formewhat fecure: And thus in the time of Life, while Christ delays his Coming, all both fincere Christians, as well as those who are merely formal, remit more or less of that exact Diligence and Watchfulness, wherewith they ought to prepare and wait for the Appearance of their

Lord.

6 & 7. But at Midnight, there being a sudden Cry that the Bridegroom was coming, they all trimmed up their Lamps, to make the best appearance they could: Thus when Jerusalem was about to he befieged, all both Christians and Jews were allarm'd to provide for their Escape: And thus when by any fudden Warning Men are made apprehensive of the Approach of Death and Judgment, all both formal and fincere Christians are rowsed up to make the

an

re

hi

an

fh

to

ed

fo

th

n

te

best Preparation for it they can.

8. At that time the wife Virgins having Oil in their Vessels, supply'd their Lamps; But the foolish ones having no Oil, and finding that their Lamps were ready to go out, tegan to beg Oil of the wife: Thus at the Siege of Ferusalem, the Christians having been warned by Christ, were ready to make their escape; but the fews were furpriz'd in it: And thus fincere and good Men, at the approach of Death and Judgment, having before exercised themselves to an habitual Practise of Piety and Virtue, and having layed up for themselves a provision of good Works, are not greatly furpriz'd, but can readily frame and prepare their Minds for it; But those, whose Religion confifts merely in outward Form, finding that this will not bear them out in the Day of Judgment, shall be greatly furpriz'd at the apprehension of it, and become folicitous to purchase true Virtue then at any rate.

9. But the wife Virgins told them, that 'twas impossible for them to furnish them with Oil; and that they could not be supplied with it any other way, than by going to those that sell, and buying it: Thus the Unbelieving Jews found, when the City came to be besieg'd, that 'twas too late to provide for their Escape: And thus wicked Men, under the apprehensions of Death and Judgment, find too late that nothing will support them in that Day, without that Preparation which they ought in time to have made for it by a good Life.

10. In the mean Time the Bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the Feast, and the 8 And the foolish faid unto the wise, Give us of your oil, for our lamps are goneout.

9 But the wife answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves.

went to buy, the bridegroom came,

## Chap. XXV.

and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open tous.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I sayunto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

14 ¶ For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own fervants, and delivered unto them his goods:

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every manaccording

## St. MATTHEW.

Door was shut: Thus, When the City was suddenly besieged, the Christians who had taken Christ's Warning, escaped; But the rest were shut up: And thus while Men are variously employ'd, and contriving many things, Death and Judgment seizes them; and they who are then sound ready and prepared, are received and rewarded by Christ.

coming afterwards 'and desiring admittance, were shut out and rejected: Thus the Jews, after their final Destruction came upon them, cried for Mercy too late: And thus those, whom Christ at Judgment finds unprepared, are, notwithstanding their earnest and too late Entreaties, disowned and rejected by him.

13. Watch ye therefore, and be always prepared, after the Example of the wife Virgins; because ye know not the Time, when your Lord cometh to call you to an Account; and it will then be too late to prepare for it, when he is come to reward every Man according

to his past doings.

14. ¶ Again, the State of the Gofpel, and the Method of God's Dispensations and Dealings with Mankind, may be fitly represented by this Similitude. A certain Man, being to take a long fourney into a far Country, divided his Stock amongst his Servants, to trade with till his return: Thus Christ preached the Will of God to Mankind, while he continued here on Earth; and at his Second Coming will expect an Account of their Improvement under it.

15. Now to one he gave five Talents, to another two, to another one, according to each one's Prudence and Ability:

and

to his feveral ability, and straightway took his journey.

ha

ler

L

ed

tal

ha

th

ur

do

fu

be

fe

M

n

tl

tl

h

L

Chap. XXV.

and then went his Journey; expecting that every one should make an improvement proportionable to what had been committed to him: Thus the Gifts and Abilities wherewith God intrusts Men, are many and various; and Christ at his Second Coming will require an Account of each one, proportionable to his Power and Opportunities of doing good.

16 & 17. Then he that had five Talents, traded and gained five others; likewife he that had two Talents, traded and gained two more: Thus fome Men improve, according to their proportion, those Gifts and Faculties wherewith God has endued them, to the increase of Religion, and the good of the World.

18. But he that had received one Talent, traded not with it, but hid it up, and it became useless: Thus other Men make no Improvements of those Gifts wherewith God has blessed them, but they live idly, and are useless in the World.

19. After a long time, the Lord of these Servants returned home, and called them all to an Account. Thus Christ, when the Time that God has appointed is accomplished, shall return and call all Men before him to Judgment.

lents, gave in his Account, that he had traded with them and gained five Talents more; And his Lord commended him for having been faithful in a finall Trust, and advanced him to a Place of greater Honour, and gave him a very great Reward: Thus those who at the Coming of Christ, shall appear to have imployed and improved

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the fame, and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords mony.

19 After a long time, the lord of those fervants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, faying, Lord, thou delivered st unto me five talents: behold I have gained besides them five talents more.

21 His lord faid unto him, Welldone, thou good and faithfulfer vant; thou haft been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He

had received two talents, came and faid, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them

ıd

e,

er

ſe

ed

ad

nt

he

is

ng of

n-

th

ad

ts,

ht

ts,

ou

me

blo

les

nts

aid

ne,

th-

aft

ra

vill

ver

ter

of

He

23 His lord faid unto him, Well done, good and faithful ervant; thou haft been faithful over a few things. I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and faid, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou haft not fown, and gathering where thou haft not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord anfwered and faid unto
him, Thou wicked
and flothful fervant,
thou knewest that I
reap where I fowed
not, and gather
where I have not
strawed:

27 Thou oughteft therefore to have

their feveral Gifts, shall be rewarded by him with Eternal Life.

had two Talents, gave in his Account, that he had traded with them and gained two Talents more; And his Lord commended him also for having been faithful in a smaller Trust, and gave him likewise a great Reward: Thus those who have less or fewer Abilities than others, if they do but improve and use them in their several Proportions, shall yet likewise be rewarded with Eternal Life.

24 & 25. But he that had received one Talent, and made no use of it, began to excuse his own Negligence, by accusing his Lord's Severity in exacting more of him than had been committed to him: Thus wicked Men, who make no use of those Abilities which God has given them, think it a Hardship that God should require them to take Pains and improve his Gifts, and employ and use them for the Good of the World.

and faid; You are an idle and floth-ful Person; If you knew that I expected an Improvement of what I left you, why did you not trade with my Money, that when I came home, I might have received my own with Increase? Thus wicked Men at the Day of Judgment shall be silenced and condemned, because though they knew that God expected they should imploy and improve his Gifts to his Honour, and to their own and others Advantage, yet they were slothful and did it not.

28, 29

28, 29 & 30. Take away therefore from this slothful Servant his one Talent, and give it to him that has ten, that he may increase more and more; and cast the unprositable Servant out of doors into Darkness and Misery: Thus God, to those who improve his Gifts and Graces, does in this present time add continually more and more assistance, and finally rewards them with Eternal Life; But from those, who improve not his Grace and Assistance, he in this present time withdraws even what he had already given, and finally condemns them to everlasting Punish-

31. Now the manner in which Christ shall judge the World, is this. He shall appear in the Glory and Majesty of God, accompanied with a numberless Retinue of Angels, and shall sit upon a Glorus Gloru

rious and Magnificent Throne.

32. And all Mankind shall be summoned before him, Princes and mean Persons, Rich and Poor, Jews and Gentiles, good Men and bad; so that nothing shall excuse any one from appearing: And he shall judge them with an impartial and unerring Judgment; and shall separate the Good from the Bad, as a Shepherd separateth the Goats from the Sheep.

33. And the Good he shall place by themselves on the one hand, and the

Bad by themselves on the other.

# Chap. XXV.

Ch

king

on h

Con

my !

the

red

the

the

hun

thir

me

ftrai

me :

was

fited

prif

unt

righ

him

wh

an l

thee

gav

the

too

ked

thee

we

pri

tot

fha:

fay

rily

In

hav

one the

me

ye s

put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Taketherefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten ta-

lents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away, even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of glory.

32 And before him shallbe gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:

33 And he shall fet the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Thon

# Chap. XXV.

34 Then shall the king say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirfty, and ye gave me drink: I was a ftranger, and ye took

me in:

n

0

11

11

ıt

h

1-

at

ie

s:

of

he

all

y,

n-

en

ne

re

ed

he

m

r,

71-

m

all

115

he

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was fick, and ye vifited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, faying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and sed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink?

38 When faw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed

thee ?

39 Or when faw we thee fick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the King shall answer, and fay unto them, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

## St. MATTHEW.

34. Then, Mankind being thus separated into Two sorts, He as a Just and Impartial Judge shall pass Sentence upon both, declaring at the same time the Reason and Equity of his Sentence. And first, turning himself to the Good on his Right-hand, he shall say; Come, ye Blessed Children of God: Enter now into the Possession of that Heavenly Kingdom, which God, who foreknoweth all things, designed and provided for you from the beginning of the World.

35 & 36. For whereas, when I was in want and necessity, ye liberally communicated to me in all the Offices of Charity and Kindness; God has in recompence appointed, that I should now communicate to you of all the Glory and Happiness of my Kingdom.

37, 38 & 39. Then the Righteous shall answer; Lord, we never saw thee in want or necessity, nor ever had opportunity of ministring to thee in any of the Offices of Charity and Kindness, that thou shouldest now recompence it with such a Reward.

40. But Christ will reply, saying: "Tis true, ye never had opportunity of doing these things to me in my own Person: Nevertheless since ye have done it to some of these my Servants, in Obedience to my Commands; I judge it as done unto my felf, and will reward you accordingly.

41. After

41. After this, turning himself to the Bad on his Left-hand, he shall pass Sentence likewise on them, saying; Depart from me, ye Cursed, sinto that unquenchable Fire, which being at first prepared for the punishment of Apostate Angels, is now allotted to you also, because ye have chosen to comply with their Temptations, in Opposition to the Commands of God.

42 & 43. For when I was in neceffity and in want, ye refused to assist me with any charitable Offices; and pursued only the Vanity and Pleasures of the World, without regard to the End and Design for which God endued you with

several Gifts and Abilities.

44. Then the Wicked likewise shall answer; Lord, we never saw thee in Want or Necessity, nor ever had opportunity of ministring to thee in any Office of Charity, that thou shouldest now punish our Neglect of this Duty with so severe a Sentence.

45. But Christ will reply, saying; "Tis true, ye never did indeed any uncharitable Action to me in my own Person, because ye never saw me: Nevertheless since ye have been cruel and uncharitable to some of these my Servants, in Disobedience to the Commands of God; I look upon it as if you had been so to my self, and will punish you accordingly.

46. Then in pursuance of this irreversible Sentence, the Wicked shall depart into everlasting Punishment; but the Righteous shall inherit eternal Happi-

neis.

41 Then shall he fay also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepated for the devil and hisangels.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirfty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a ftranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: fick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shallthey also answer him, faying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

Ċ

t

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I sayunto you, Inasmuch as as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

# CHAP. XXVI.

The Jews Conspiracy against Christ, ver. 1. Christ's Feet anointed, ver. 6. Judas bribed to betray Christ, ver. 14. Christ's Passover Supper, ver. 17. The Institution of the Lord's Supper, ver. 26. Christ foretells his Disciples slight, and Peter's denial, ver. 31. Christ's Prayer and Passon, ver. 36. Christ betrayed by Judas, and apprehended, ver. 47. Christ's Trial before Caiaphas, ver. 57. Peter's denial, ver. 69.

A ND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

he iem De-

ye ver-

and

s an

gave

was gave

ran-

me

and

not:

tion,

not.

they

nim,

vhen

hun-

t, or

iked,

nister

all he

fay-

y un-

ch as

ot to

otto

e shall

ever-

nent:

teous

IAP.

2 Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 Then affembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people unto the palace of the high-priest, who was called Caiaphas.

4 And they confulted that they might take Jefus by fubtilty, and kill bim.

5 But they faid, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uptoar among the people. ed all these Discourses, he began again to put his Disciples in mind, that at the approaching Passover, which was to be celebrated within two days, he should be betrayed into the hands of his Enemies, and delivered over to the Roman Soldiers to be crucified.

3. According to which Prediction, the Chief Priests, and Teachers, and Elders of the People, who had all along resolved to take the first opportunity of destroying Jesus, met together about this time, in Caiaphas's Palace, who was High-Priest this Year, to consult which way they might best accomplish their Design.

preserved, not to apprehend Jesus openally and by force, but to get him some way betrayed privately into their Hands, and then to put him to Death. Yet some advised not to undertake this at the time of the Feast, when so great a Multitude of People was gathered together; lest the People who look'd on him as a great Prophet, should raise a

Tumult and rescue him. But the Zeal of others prevailed to have him seized as soon as possibly they could; and so they accomplished the Will of God, that he who was to be the true Paschal Lamb, should suffer at the time of the Passover; and that he who was to suffer for the Sins of the whole World, might do it at such a time, when there should be most Witnesses present at his Death.

6 & 7. In the mean time Jesus, being shortly to suffer, continued in the Villages near about Jerusalem. And as he was sitting at Meat at Bethany, in the House of one Simon, who had formerly been a Leper, and had been cured by Jesus; there came behind him a Woman having a Box of precious Ointment, with which she anointed his Feet and Head.

8 & 9. Which when Judas, \* one of his Disciples saw, he was angry and said; Wherefore doth this Woman spend so much good Ointment to no purpose, which might have been sold for a great deal of Money, enough to have relieved abundance of Poor People?

fo. But Jesus knowing that Judas spake this not out of Charity but Covetousness, said: Do not chide the Woman; For that which she has now done is a very good Work, being a Testimony of her great Love and Honour for me.

II And as to what you fay about the Poor, I tell you, ye have them al-

6 ¶ Now when Jefus was in Bethany, in the house of Simontheleper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster-box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

th

pr

W

fh

th

do

m

the

das

un

pri

the

giv

deli

you

ven

for filv

tim por

him

9 For this ointment might have been fold for much, and given to the poor.

no When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

the pooral ways with you, but me ye have not always.

<sup>\*</sup> Oi μαθηταί feems here to be put for είς τῶν μαθητῶν, as δι ληςαί for είς τῶν ληςῶν, chap. 27. v. 44. and ἐπεκάθισαν ἐπάνω ἀυτῶν, for ἐπάνω ἐνός ἐξ ἀυτῶν, chap. 21, 7. & τεθνήκασι, for τέθνηκε, chap. 2. 20. and the like in many other places.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

m

of

n-

a-

OX

us

ır-

25

his

ley,

ay-

ur-

nt-

ave

ch,

the

efus

he

Vhy

NO-

ath

ood

nave

vith

lave

ãv,

s av ars,

For

?

13 Verily I say unto you, Wherefoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

14 Then one of thetwelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priefts,

15 And faid unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of filver.

16 And from that time he fought opportunity to betray him.

ways with you; fo that ye can never want Opportunities of relieving them, if ye be charitably disposed. shall continue with you but a little while; so that ye need not grudge what is laid out upon me during this fhort time.

12. For within a very few days I shall be dead and buried. And therefore there is one good thing further in what this Woman has done, that you are not aware of; and that is, that she has anointed me before-hand against my Burial, and only spent that Ointment upon me yet alive, which you would not have grudged to have embalmed me with when Dead.

13. Affuredly I tell you, in every part of the World where the Gospel shall be preached, and the History of my Life and Death preserved; this thing alfo, which this Woman has now done, shall be kept in memory, to the Praise of her extraordinary Faith and Love.

14 & 15. After this, the same Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve whom Jesus had chosen to be his nearest Companions and Apostles, ungratefully and covetously resolving to betray his Master, went to the Chief Priests (whose intentions and dispositions he well knew,) to fee how much Money they would give him to deliver Fesus into their hands; and they agreed to give him † Thirty Pieces of Silver.

Small Sum: 16. And from that time forward, Fu- The Price of das watched all Opportunities of disco-a slave: vering to them Jesus's private Retire- And the ments, that they might fend and appre-Ransom of a hend him in the absence of the multi-Servants

Life. Exod. 17. 921. 32. tude.

N 2

+ A very

17. Now on the first day of Unleavened Bread, before the Evening which began the day on which the Paffover was to be eaten, the Disciples asked Fesus where he would have them make Provision for their eating the Passover; For they had not a House of their own

in Ferusalem. 18. Fefus, to convince them at this time by an evident proof, that all the things he was to do and fuffer were according to Divine Foreknowledge and Appointment, bids them go into the City, and tells them where and with what Tokens they should find a Man, who at first asking would conduct them to a House fit for Fesus and his Disciples to keep the Paffover in.

19. Accordingly the Disciples went into the City, and finding all Tokens answer exactly as Jesus had foretold, they made all things ready for his keep-

ing the Passover.

20. Things being thus prepared, Jefus came at Evening, and fat down to

Supper with his Twelve Apostles.

21. And as they were eating, Jesus knowing what things were ready to befal him; faid to them; Verily one of you Twelve shall betray me into the Hands of them that feek my Life.

22. At this they were greatly amazed and troubled, knowing all, except Fudas, their own Innocence; and defiring to clear themselves from suspicion, they every one faid, Lord, I hope 'tis not I, that shall be guilty of fo horrid a Crime.

23. Jesus answered: One that sits very near me, and now eats out of the fame Dish with me, is the Person that will betray me.

## Chapl XXVI.

17 J Now the first day of the feaf of unleavened bread, thedisciples came to Jesus, saying unto Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the paffover?

18 And he faid. Go into the city to fuch a man, and fay unto him, The Mafter faith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house with my dif-

ciples.

ro And the disciples did as Jefus had appointed them, and they made ready the paffover.

a

M fi

te

b

d

7

n

t

tl

I

b

20 Now when the even was come, he fatdownwith the twelve.

21 And as they dideat, he faid, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding forrowful, and began every one of them to fay unto him, Lord, Is it I?

23 And he answered and faid, He that dippeth his hand with me in the diff, the fame shall betray me.

24 The

# Chap. XXVI.

e

d,

0

0

ilt

e-

at

d,

to

ay

af-

eis

eep

hy dif-

fci-

had

and

the

rhen

ome,

h the

they

Ve-

you,

shall

were

row-

every

o fay

d, Is

fwere that

hand

e diffi, betray

4 The

24 The fon of man goeth as it is written of him: but wo unto that man by whom the fon of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man, if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas, which betrayedhim, answered and faid, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast faid.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, Jefus took bread, and bleffed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and faid, Take, eat; this is my body.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, faying; Drink yeall of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new

## St. MATTHEW.

24. And I indeed must suffer according to the Will of God, and according to the Prophecies that went hefore concerning me. But tho' the Divine Wifdom thinks fit to make use of the Wickedness of my Betrayer, as an Inftrument to effect great and excellent Defigns; yet the Wickedness of him that wilfully and maliciously betrays me, is not the less for being thus overruled by the Wisdom of God to serve Just, and Good, and Wise Purposes: And therefore the Punishment of that Man shall be very great; so that happy had it been for him, if he had never been born.

25. Hereupon Judas, not at all terrified at these severe Words of Christ, but hardened now in his Wickedness, and as if he thought he could conceal his Design, said, Lord, is it I? Jesus answered, yea, you know it is so \*.

26. ¶ At the end of this Supper, Jefus took Bread in his Hands, and when he had given thanks, he brake it and distributed it to his Disciples, saying, Take and eat this. For as the eating of the Passover, was a perpetual Commemoration of the Deliverance of the Children of Israel out of Egypt; so from henceforward your eating this Sacramental Bread, shall be a Commemoration or Remembrance of my Death, and of my Body being broken for you.

27 & 28. In like manner, taking a Cup of Wine in his Hand, he gave

<sup>\*</sup> These Words both of Judas and Christ, sitting near together, seem to have been spoken low, so that those only who sat next could hear them; as is probable from the Circumstances of this History in the several Evangelists compared together.

Ch

unt

nig

coc fha

to

**sho** 

yet

the

faic

eth

un

Ge

fai

ple

w

yo

W

th

be

be

ve

is

fu

ta

W

at

C

0

M

th

testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

thanks, and gave it to his Disciples, faying, Drink ye all of this. For from henceforth your Drinking this Sacramental Wine, shall be a Commemoration of my Blood being shed for the Remission of their Sins who believe and obey the Gospel, and a perpetual Confirmation of this new Covenant.

22. 16.

And I will have the Jewish + See Luk. Passover Commemoration + no longer continued; but the things of which these were Figures, shall now be fulfilled and accomplished in the Kingdom of the Messiah.

> 30. Then having fung an Hymn, they departed, and went into the Mount of Olives.

> 31. ¶ At this time Jesus forewarned his Disciples, that before Morning they would fall away from him, and be afraid to own him, because of the things which they should see come upon him; fo that in them should be fulfilled that Prophecy of Zechary; (Zech. 13. 7.) The Shepherd shall be smitten, and the Sheep scattered.

> 32. But do not despair, faith he; I will rife from the Dead on the third Day, and go into Galilee, and there ye fhall fee me again.

> 33. Peter, troubled that Fesus should fpeak of their being afraid to own him, faid; Lord, I will never be afraid to own you; nay, tho' all your other Disciples should fall away from you, yet I never would.

34. Fesus answered; Will you, Peter, never be afraid to own me? I tell you, that this very Night, within the

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.

30 And when they had fung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 Then saith Jefus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night; for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

32 But after I am rifen again, I willgo before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered and faid unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I fay

unto

his

the

nto

ink

this

un-

en I

vith

hers

hey

mn,

into

ves.

Je-

All

ided

this

rit-

the

the

ock

d a-

am

lgo Ga-

verim, hall

ause

ill I

unfay

nto

unto thee, that this night before the thou cock crow, shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter faid unto him, Though I should die with thee, vet will I not deny thee: Likewise also faid all the disciples.

26 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and faith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

27 And he took with him Peter, and thetwo fons of Zebedee, and began to be forrowful, and very heavy.

38 Then faith he unto them, My foul is exceeding forrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

Time of \* Cock-crowing, or before three in the Morning, you shall not only be afraid to own me, but shall expresly deny me, and That three several

times together.

35. But Peter, not sensible of his own Weakness, and not knowing how great the Temptation would be, still permited in his Confidence, faying; Lord, though it should cost me my Life, yet will I never disown you. And the rest of the

Disciples said the same also.

36. After this, Telus knowing that the hour of his last Passion approached, went with † his Disciples into a place call'd Gethfemane; and there separating Peter, James and John, (that they who had feen his glorious Transfiguration in the Mount, might be Witnesses also of his lowest Humiliation and Passion;) he bad the other eight fit down there and tarry, till he went a little further to Pray.

37. Going on therefore with Peter,  $\mathcal{F}_{ames}$ , and  $\mathcal{F}_{obn}$ , he began to be in a

very great Agony of Grief.

38. And he faid, My Soul is exceeding forrowful, evenunto Death; tarry ye here and watch, while I retire a little fur-

† That is, with the Eleven; For Judas had gone out from

Supper to the chief Priests in order to betray him.

<sup>\*</sup> Alextogo Quvia, Mar. 13, 35. that is, the time from twelve at Night, till three in the Morning; which last hour was usually called the Second Cock-crowing, as is observed by Bochart and others; so that, what in St. Mark is, before the Cock crow twice, Mar. 14. 30. and in this place, before the Cock crow, or within the time of Cock-crowing; fignifies the fame thing, and is as much as if Christ had said, before three in the Morning.

The state of the s

39 And he went
a little further, and
fellon his face, and
prayed, faying, O
my Father, if it be
possible, let this cup
passfrom me: nevertheless, not as I will,
but as thou wilk.

39. Then leaving Them also behind him, he went on a little further, and prostrated himself upon the Ground, and prayed, saying; My Father, if in thy Infinite Wisdom thou sawest it sit, and that thy Glory and the Salvation of Men could be equally promoted, without my suffering this cruel and ignominious Death, I could even desire that I might escape it: But this is only the first apprehension that Humane Nature has of Death; and I submit my self wholly to thy Divine Will and Pleafure.

40 & 41. Then returning to his Disciples, and finding them sleeping, he said to Peter; What! Did you say, even now, you could readily die with me? and can you not now watch with me one hour? Be upon your Guard, and pray also to God for his Assistance, that ye may be delivered from the danger which is just ready to come upon you. Your Minds indeed I know are sincere, and willing to do your Duty; but ye have not attained such a strength and steddiness of Resolution, as to prevail over the natural Wants and Necessities of the Body.

42. Again, leaving them the fecond time, he went and prayed, faying; My Father, fince in thy Infinite Wisdom thou feest it fit and necessary, that I should undergo this cruel and ignominious Death; I acquiesce entirely and submit to thy Will.

43. Then returning to his Disciples, he found them again sleeping; For it was late in the Night, and they were very weary and sleepy.

44. Again, leaving them the third time, he went and prayed to the fame import as before; submitting himself 40 And hecometh unto the disciples, and findeth them a-fleep, and faith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

pray, that ye enter not into temptation; the fpirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying. O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them afleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed

## Chap. XXVI.

prayed the third time, faying the fame words.

vent

and

and

, 0

it be

cup

ever-

will,

meth

iples,

em a-

unto

could

with

and

enter

ation:

eed is

e flesh

away

econd

d, fay-

her, if

y not

m me,

it, thy

came

em aortheir

ne lest

prayed

and

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and faith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rife, let us be going; behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 J And while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a fign, faying, .Whomfoever I shall kifs, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail master; and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend,

## St. MATTHEW.

wholly to the Divine Will and Pleafure.

45. And returning to his Disciples, and finding them the third time sleeping, he said; What, † are ye yet overcome with sleep and drowsines? Nay, ye may e'en sleep on now; I have conquer'd my Agony, and 'tis too late for your Watching to be any comfort or affistance to me now: The time of my Suffering is come, and I am just going to be betray'd into the Hands of wicked and malicious Men.

46. Come, rife, let us go; he that

betrays me, is just upon us.

47. Scarce had Jesus said these Words, when suddenly Judas appeared conducting a great Number of Officers armed with Swords and Staves, who were sent from the chief Priests and Elders to seize Jesus in his private Retirement, Judas having undertaken to be their Guide.

48. Now because the Officers did not know Jesus's Face, and it was also Night; therefore, that they might not mistake the Person, Judas had given them a Token, that when he came up to Jesus, he would falute him with a Kiss; by which Sign they should know him, and not fail to apprehend and secure him.

49. Coming up therefore to Jesus, he according to the appointed Signal, faluted and kissed him.

50. Jesus, knowing his Design, reproved his Ingratitude with this gentle, yet

ievere

<sup>+</sup> These Words may either be read interrogatively, Ka Sivers To Los Los Do ye yet sleep? Or else they must be understood ironically, and by way of Reproof. I have expressed both Senses in the Paraphrase.

fevere Rebuke; Friend, wherefore come you attended in this manner? But while he was speaking, the Officers seized him, and began to carry him away.

51. Then Peter, seeing to what extremity things tended; out of great Zeal for his Master's safety, drew his Sword, and striking at one of the High Priest's Servants, cut off a piece of his Ear.

52. But Jesus forbad him to make use of his Sword, saying; These are not the Weapons which my Disciples must use. They who are impatient and passionate, and ready upon every Provocation to run to the Sword, shall themselves be liable to perish by the Sword. Our part is to overcome, not by sighting, but by Patience and Suffering.

53. Otherwise, If I had designed to resist these Men, and wanted Assistance to conquer them, do you not think I could easily have pray'd to God, (and can even yet do it, if I thought it expedient) and he would presently have sent me an Army of Angels to destroy them?

54. But how then should the Will of God and the Predictions of the Prophets have been suffilled? For God sent me into the World, to suffer and die, and the Prophets have foretold that I should do so; and all these things must needs be accomplished.

55. Then Jesus turning himself to the Multitude, said; What makes you come out against me in the Night, with a Band of Soldiers, armed with Swords and Clubs, as if ye came to apprehend a Robber that would make strong Resistance? Did I not every Day sit openly teaching in the Temple, and ye might have taken me when you plea-

## Chap. XXVI.

wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them that were with Jefus, firetched out his hand, and drew his fword, and firoke a fervant of the high priefts, and smote off his ear.

52 Then faid Jefus unto him, Put up again thy fword into its place; for all they that take the fword, shall perish with the fword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then fhall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

55 And in that fame hour faid Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple.

ple, and ye laid no hold on me.

u

is

is

a

e

-

1-

11

e

h

u

0

le

e

n

of

n

15

S,

ıt

d

I

u

56 But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples for sook him, and fled.

ff And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest; where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priefts palace, and went in, and fat with the fervants to fee the end.

59 Now the chief priefts and elders, and all the council, fought false witness against Jesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, fed, if you had had any great Crime to lay to my Charge?

56. But now is the Time, wherein the Infinite Wisdom of God has appointed me to suffer; and all these things ought thus to come to pass, that the Scriptures might be fulfilled. Then all the Disciples, seeing there was no Remedy, and that Jesushimself would not suffer them to try to rescue him,

forfook him and fled.

57. S Now they that had apprehend-

ed Jesus, carried him to Cataphas the High Priest, in whose House the Council of the Scribes and Elders were ready

gathered together.

58. And Peter, having recovered his Fear a little, and taken Courage; followed them at a Distance to Caiaphas his Palace, and went in after them, and fat down among the Servants, to see what the Event of this thing would be.

59. Then the Council, having gotten fession in their Power, sought for all the Witnesses against him that they could; and like malicious Informers rather than just Judges, contrived so to examine them, as to urge them, if possible, to testify some thing against him, which they might judge to be a Crime worthy of Death.

60. But none witnessed so much against him, as was sufficient to condemn him: Nay, tho' many False Witnesses were suborned on purpose, yet could not they convict him of any

Capital Crime.

<sup>+</sup> reyors, which we render was done, may as properly be rendered is done: And then these will be the Words, not of the Evangelist, but of Christ; See Luc. 22. 53. But the Sense is the same either way.

61. At

Chap. XXVI.

61. At last there rose up two salse Witnesses, who maliciously misrepresenting and misinterpreting some things which he had said, and industriously putting the most odious Sense upon Words which they did not understand; they testified against him, that he had declared, He could pull down the Temple of God, and build it up again in three Days.

62. To this when Jesus made no Reply, the High-Priest standing up in a Passion, said; Have you nothing to say for your self? Can you make no Answer to the Accusations these Men

bring against you?

63. But Fesus, knowing that they sought only to urge him to say something which they might lay hold on, and turn to his Accusation, still held his peace. Then said the High-Priest; I adjure you solemnly by the dreadful and tremendous Name of God, in whose Presence you stand, that you tell us plainly and truly, whether you be indeed the Messiah, the Son of God.

64. Then Jesus confessed, saying, I am; and ye shall shortly see a convincing Evidence of it, in that wonderful and unparallelled Destruction which I will send upon the Jewish Nation; in the quick and powerful Progress, which the Gospel shall make over the Earth; and finally in tmy glorious Appearing

to Judge the World.

65. At this the High-Priest in great Indignation rent his Clothes, saying; Here is manifest and notorious Blasphemy; What need we trouble our selves to seek for any other Witnesses? This whole Assembly has now with their own Ears heard him speak plain and direct Blasphemy.

61 And faid, This fellow faid, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? What is it which these witness against thee?

63 But Jefus held his peace. And the high priest answered and faid unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.

64 Jefus faith unto him, Thou haft faid: nevertheless I fay unto you, Hereafter shall ye fee the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hathspoken blasphemy, what further needhave we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What

Chap. XXVI.

66 What think ye? They answered and faid, He is guilty of death.

This

able

mple

build

high

laid

wer-

ing?

phich

3 4.

held

1 the

rered m, I

the

thou

thou

the

un-

haft

ess I

Iere-

e the

ting

nd of

ning

hea-

high

his

He

phe-

ther

wit-

wor

his

Vhat

67 Then did they fpit in his face, and buffeted him, and others fmote him with the palms of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophelie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that fmote thee?

69 Now Peter fat without in the palace: and a damfel came unto him, faying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, faying, I know not what thou fayest.

7 f And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid faw him; and faid unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and faid to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

#### St. MATTHEW.

66. What think you of it? They all faid; This is manifestly a Capital Crime, and worthy of Death.

67 6 68. Then began the Servants and common People to fall upon him as a Man already condemned; fpitting upon him, buffeting him, offering all manner of Rudeness and Indignities to him; and some hoodwinking him, struck him with their hands, and jeeringly faid; Now, you that pretend to be a great Prophet, show your Skill, and tell who it is that fmites you.

69. ¶ All this time Peter fat without in the Court among the Servants; and as he was fitting there, there came to him a Maid-Servant, who remembred she had seen him, and said; I believe you were one of the Followers of this Fesus.

70. Peter surprized with Fear at this fudden Challenge, and forgetting his former Confidence, immediately denied it, faying; I know nothing of Fefus, neither can't tell what you mean.

71. Again, as he was going out into the Porch, another Maid-Servant feeing him, faid to those that stood by; Surely That Man there, was one of Fesus's Followers.

72. But Peter hearing her, turned himself about, and in a mixt Passion of Fear and Anger, swore that he never had any thing to do with Him.

73. A little after, another of the standers-by faid to Peter; Certainly, if I be not strangely mistaken, you were one of this Man's Disciples; For your very Speech showeth you are a Galilæan.

74. But

26. 34.

Ch

ed 1

Pila

nou

wh

him

tha

den

hin

aga

ces chi der

> fin ha

> the

W

hi

74. But Peter in great Consternation, denied again with Oaths and Imprecations, that ever he knew Fesus: And prefently the Cock crew.

75. Then Peter in great confusion of Mind, remembred how fesus, reproving his too forward Confidence, had foretold that \* before Cock-crow-\* See ch. ing he would deny him thrice: And grieved at his own Weakness and Fearfulness, he went out and wept bitterly.

74 Then began he to curfe and faying, fwear, know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice And he went out, and wept bitterly.

## CHAP. XXVII.

Christ carried before Pilate, v. 1. Judas's Death, v. 3. Christ's Tryal before Pilate, ver. 11. Pilate endeavours to release Christ, but cannot, ver. 15. Christ mocked by the Soldiers, and crucified, ver. 27. The three hours Christ's Death, and the following Darkness, ver. 45. Signs, ver. 50. Christ's Burial, ver. 57. His Sepulchre watched, ver. 62.

i. NOW the Council of the Jews, having spent the greatest part of the Night in examining Tefus, after a short Retirement came in the Morning to confult among themselves, which way they should get him put to

2. And because they might not of themselves cause him to be executed, they resolved to carry him before the Roman Governor, with a grievous Ac-

THEN the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people, took counfel against Jesus to put him to death.

And when had bound they him, they led him away, and deliver-

ed

# Chap. XXVII. St. MATTHEW.

ed him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

n he

to

nan.

itely

re-

ords

faid

fore

hou

cice.

out,

ly.

3.

urs

by

urs

ing

bre

he ng he

el-

le,

ıft.

to

en

nd

m.

r

d

Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver, to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have finned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they faid, What is that to us? fee thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the culation of Blasphemy against God and the Emperor, as having owned himself to be the Messiah and King of the Jews. Putting him therefore in Bonds, they brought him to Pilate, who was at that time Governor of Judea.

3. Then Judas (who had betrayed Jesus out of Covetousness) when he saw that the Council had really condemned Jesus, and that they were likely to prevail to have him put to Death; was struck with Remorse and Horror at the greatness of his Crime, and carried back the Thirty Pieces of Silver to the Chief Priess and Elders.

4. And he faid; I have committed a horrid Sin, in betraying an innocent Man to Death. But they faid, That's not our Fault; Look you to that.

5. Seeing therefore that he could not retrieve what he had done, he in great Anguish of Mind threw down the Money in the Council-chamber adjoyning to the Temple; and unable to bear the Horror and Despair of a Guilty Conscience, went and \* made away with bimself.

6. Now the Chief Priests taking up the Money, thought it was not fit to

put

<sup>\*</sup> In this place the Word is annyzaro, he hanged himself. In Acts 1, 18, 'tis repring yeromen's educator meso, he fell headlong and burst asunder. Either therefore in the utmost despair and confusion of mind, he hanged himself in such a manner, as that he fell down and burst; as most Expositors both ancient and modern suppose. Or else he threw himself down some Precipice, repring existero; and then the word annyzaro must here be used proverbially, to signific only in general that he destroy'd himself.

put it into the Treasury among the Oblations consecrated to the Service of God, because it was the price of Blood, having been given to procure a Man's being betray'd to Death. So religiously did those Hypocrites pretend to be cautious in disposing of that Money, wherewith they had not scrupled to procure the Death of an innocent Person.

7. Upon Confultation they refolved therefore to lay it out upon a piece of Land to bury Strangers in, and they bought therewith the *Potters-Field*.

8. And the Field was from thenceforward called Aceldema, that is, the

Field of Blood.

9 & 10 Then was fulfilled that Prophecy, † Zech. 11. 13. I took the thirty Pieces of Silver, the price of him that was valued, and gave them for the Potters Field, by the Command of the Lord.

before Pilate the Roman Governour, being accused of setting up himself to be a King in Opposition to Casar, Pilate asked him, saying; Do you pretend to be King of the Jews? Jesus said; Tho' I appear to you a mean and contemptible Person, yet 'tis true that I am a King; only my Kingdom is not indeed of this World.

filver pieces, and faid, It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counfel, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood unto

this day.

o (Then was fulfilled that which was fpoken by Jeremy the Prophet, faying, And they took the thirty pieces of filver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Ifrael did value:

8

1

E

for the potters field, as the Lord appoint-

ed me)

flood before the governour; and the governour asked him, faying, Art

<sup>† &#</sup>x27;Tis possible that some of that Prophecy, which goes under the Name of Zechary, might be indeed feremiah's, (as Mr. Meal thinks;) or that Zechary might have this passage from feremy, (as Grotius conjectures.) But Bishop Hall, with others, supposes that the Transcriber of this Verse mistook Zpis for Ipis, as he says he has seen it abbreviated in a very old Manuscript.

## Chap. XXVII.

thou the King of the lews? And Jesus faidunto him, Thou fayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered

nothing.

ind

W-

nto

use

of

ook

ight

pot-

oury

that

The

unto

s ful-

was

remy

ying,

k the f fil-

fhim

alued,

f the

rel did

them

s field.

point-

lefus

he go-

d the

asked

Art

s under

r. Mead

777y, (as

festhat,

fays he

13 Then faith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnessagainst thee?

14 Andheanswered to never a word, infomuch that the governor marvelled

greatly.

15 Now at that feaft the governor was wont to release unto the people a whom priloner, they would.

16 And they had then a notable prifoner, called Barabbas.

17: Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate faid unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or lefus which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

#### St. MATTHEW.

12. But when the Chief-Priefts and Elders continued still to accuse him, and lay many things to his Charge; Fesus, knowing their unreasonable Malice, and the manifest improbability of their Accusations, refused to return any more Answers.

13. Then faid Pilate; Why do you not answer? Do you not hear how many Acculations they bring against

you?

14. But Fesus still continued filent; To that Pilate greatly wondred what his

meaning should be.

15. Now it was the Custom, that at every Passover, the Governour gratified the People with pardoning and releasing one of the Prisoners; whom they should choose.

16. And it happened that there was at that time a notorious Malefactor, called Barabbas, in Prison for having been at the Head of a great Sedition.

17. When therefore Pilate faw, that tho' no Capital Crime was prov'd against Fesus, yet the Chief of the Fews were obstinately bent to have him put to Death, and would hear no Reason; he thought of this Expedient; to propose to the People. Fesus and Barabbas, that they might choose which of them they would have released; thinking that furely they would choose Fesus, rather than fuch an infamous Malefactor as Barabbas.

18. For Pilate perceived plainly, by the whole carriage of the matter, that Fesus was brought before him merely through the Envy and Malice of the Chief-Priefts and Scribes, who were enraged at the Esteem which his Works and Doctrine had gained him among the People.

O 19. And

2 But

Ch

eda

faid

us,

drei

2

ed h

ther

had he d

be c

dier

nor

the

and

him

of so

ped

on

rob

2

they

cro

the

head

his

the

befo

mo

Hai

Jew

upo

the

him

thi

the

2

19. And Pilate was the more confirmed in his Opinion, by this Accident. As he was fitting upon the Bench, there came a Messenger from his Wise, to desire him not to have any Hand in any thing that should be done against that Innocent Person; for she had been much troubled in a Dream about him that Morning. God so ordering things by his special Providence, that there should be from all sides Evidence of Jesus's Innocence, and of the Jews invincible and inexcusable Malice.

20 & 21. Pilate therefore hoping to get Jesus released by this Expedient, proposed Jesus and Barabbas together, that the People might choose which of them they would have released. But the Chief-Priests and Elders strongly urged the People, and, contrary to Pilate's Expectation, prevailed upon them to ask Barabbas, and not Jesus.

22. Then faid *Pilate*; What shall I do then with *Jefus*? They all faid with one consent, Let him be crucified.

23. Pilate faid; Why, what Capital Crime have ye convicted him of ? I do not fee that any thing worthy of Death, according to the Roman Laws, is proved against him. But they cried out with so much the greater Rage and Madnes; Away with him, Crucify him.

24. Then Pilate, feeing that he could not prevail with the People to fet Jefus free, but that the Tumult increased to such a degree as even to endanger a Sedition, yielded to their Importunity; yet with a Protestation of his own dislike of the Fact. For taking Water, and washing his Hands openly before the Multitude, he said; I am not guilty of this innocent Man's Death; Be ye answerable for it.

19 ¶ When he was fet down on the Judgment-feat, his wife fent unto him, faying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

20 But the chief priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate faith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? they all say unto him, Let him

be crucified.

23 And the governor faid, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, faying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate faw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, faying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.

25 Then

25 Then answered all the people, and faid, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Thenreleafed he Barabbas unto them: and when he had fcourged Jefus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 Then the foldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet

1

)

d

n

t

?

ıt

et

ld it lt

k

ed

I

ft

n

And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, faying, Hail, King of the lews.

30 And they fpit upon him, and took the reed, and fmote him on the head.

25. The People all replied; We will be answerable for it: If there be any Guilt in this Matter, let it lie upon us and our Posterity.

26. Pilate then released unto them Barabbas. And when he had scourged Jesus, and sound that neither would † That satisfy the People, he delivered + see John him up to be crucified.

27. ¶ Then \* the Soldiers came about Fesus, and took him into the Governor's Hall, and gathered together their whole Company, to abuse and make sport with him.

28. And because they had heard that he had been stiled *King of the* Jews, they stript him of his own Cloaths, and in derision put upon him a Scarlet Robe.

29. Then fetting upon his Head a Wreath of Thorns for a Crown, and putting in his Hand a Reed or Cane for a Scepter, they kneeled down before him, and in mockery faluted him as King.

30. And they fcornfully fpit upon his Face; and took the Cane out of his Hand, and beat him upon the Head with it.

<sup>\*</sup> It appears from the History, John 19, that some of these things were done before Pilate condemned Jesus: But St. Matthew for methods sake relates all these Circumstances together.

# A Paraphrase on

31. And when they were weary with mocking and abusing him, they disprobed him of his Royal Attire, and put his own Cloaths on again, and led him away with the \* Cross upon his Shoulders to be crucified.

32. And as they were going out of the City, they met with one Simon a Cyrenian; and because Jesus was weary and not able to carry the Cross any farther, or because they suspected Simon to be a Favourer of Jesus, they compelled Him to carry the Cross after them.

33 & 34. And when they came to the place, which, from Malefactors being used to be executed therein, was called Golgotha, that is, The Place of a Skull; they gave Jesus † a Potion of Vinegar, mixed with Gall; but when he tasted it, he resused to drink.

35. Then na iling him to the Cross, they stripped him; and some of his Cloaths they divided among them, and for the rest they cast Lots; sulfilling that Prophecy, (Pfal. 22. 18.) They parted my Garments among them, and cast Lots upon my Vesture.

# Chap. XXVII.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him.

h

0

I

tl

CI

0

h

th

hi

he

T

th

bu

da

if

G

fre

th

me

fai

the

car

be

do cro bel

Go

hir

hav

of

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his crofs.

33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to fay, a place of a skull,

34 They gavehim vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, they parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

\* Some Learned Men think it was only that Piece of Wood which was to be fastened across the Stake.

+ Instead of a stupefying Potion usually given in compassion to Malefactors.

# Chap. XXVII.

36 And fitting down, they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head, his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their

heads,

40 And faying, Thou that destroyes the temple, and buildest it in three days, fave thy self: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders,

faid;

42 He faved others, himself he cannot save: if he bethe King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.

43 He trusted in God; let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son

of God.

#### St. MATTHEW.

36. And they appointed a Watch, to tarry by him, and to take care that his Disciples might not come and take him away.

- 37. And that all who passed by, might know who he was, and the Crime for which he was crucified; they put up over his Head this Inscription, JESUS KING OF THE JEWS.
- 38. They crucified also with him two Robbers, one on each side; that seeing him executed in the midst of such notorious Malesactors, the People might be the more strongly prejudiced to believe him an Impostor.
- 39 & 40. Moreover they which paffed by, shaking their Heads at him in a jeering and insulting manner, said;

  \* Well could you indeed pull down the \* See ch. Temple and build it again in three 26. v. 16. Days time, who are not now able to save your self from Death. If you be, as you pretended, the Son of God; make proof now of your Power, and come down from the Cross.
- 41 & 42. In like manner the Chief-Priests, and Scribes, and Elders, mocking and deriding him, said; He pretended to do great Miracles for the delivering of other Men from Diseases and Death, but you see he cannot now deliver Himself; If he be indeed the Messiah, let him but give us this one Demonstration of it, and we shall have some reason to believe him.
- 43. He made a show of trusting and relying upon God, calling him his Fa-O 3 ther

ed ne n, ii-

ey nd Siim

to

ney o a goay,

nim nk, gall: had he

erueartents,
eat it
filled

they nents and

e did

Vood

onto

And

Chaj

50

he ha

with

yielde

51

the v

twain

top to

and

quak

rent.

52

were

man

which

of the

hisr

wen

city,

unto

54 cent

that

wat

the

tho:

wei

ed g

Tru

Son

5

me

hol

wh

fus

nif

ler m

Jo

th

ther, and pretending to be fent by him: But if God \* delights in him, and is indeed pleased with him, why doth he not now deliver him? These things they said, not that they desired any conviction, but only because they thought it impossible for him now to escape.

44. † One of the Robbers also, which were crucified with him, reMarginal Proached him after the same manner.

26, 8.

45. ¶ Now from Mid-day till Three a Clock in the Afternoon, there was miraculous Darkness over all the Land.

- 46. And about Three a Clock, Jesus being in the Agony of Death, cried out with a loud Voice; Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? That is, My God, My God, why hast thou for saken me? Psal. 22. 1.
- 47. Which words, fome of them that stood by, hearing, and not understanding, but being ignorantly deceived by the like found of different words, said; He calls upon Elias to come and help him.
- 48. Then one ran, and filled a Sponge with Vinegar, and with a Reed lifted it up to him to drink.
- 49. But others faid; Nay, let him alone; tarry, and fee whether *Elias* will come to help him.

44 The thieves alfo which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth,

45 Now from the fixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesuscried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 Some of them that flood there, when they heard that, faid, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on areed, and gave him to drink,

49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

<sup>\*</sup> וב עבות בי חפץ בי אובי Pfal. 22.8. Which the Septuagint renders by

# Chap. XXVII.

50 ¶ Jefus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghoft.

the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent.

ves

ru-

caft

eth.

the

Was

the

nth

the

cri-

oud

Eli,

ha-

My

vhy

ken

em

ere,

ard

nan

ht-

em

k a

dit

and

and

ζ,

aid,

fee

will

by

fus,

.

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of faints which flept, arose.

of the graves after hisrefurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared

unto many.

54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jefus, faw the earthquake, and those things that weredone, they feared greatly, faying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding afar off) which followed Jefus from Galilee, ministring unto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

#### St. MATTHEW.

out again with a loud Voice, faying; All that God has appointed and the Prophets foretold I should suffer, is now finished; and recommending his Soul into the Hands of God, he died.

51. And immediately the Veil which parted the Holy of Holies from the Sanctuary, was rent in pieces; fignifying the diffolution of the Jewish Oeconomy or Dispensation, and the opening to all Believers \* an entrance into the \* Heb. 10. Holiest, that is, into Heaven, by the 19, 20. Blood of Jesus. The Earth also trembled, and the Rocks were cleaved; fignifying that some great alterations were

Power of God.

52 & 53. The Sepulchres also of the Dead were opened, and many Bodies of Holy Men arose, and appeared after Christ's Resurrection to many that dwelt in *Jerusalem*; Signifying that Christ, by his Death and Resurrection, had destroyed him that had the Power of Death, and given earnest of a General

working by the mighty and immediate

54. Moreover the Roman Captain himself, with his Soldiers that were set to watch Jesus, astonished at the greatness of these Prodigies, said; Certainly this was at least an Innocent Person, if not more than a Man.

Refurrection from the Dead.

55 & 56. Many Women also, who had travelled along with Fesus from Galilee, and supplied him with Necessaries in his Journey, stood at a distance from the Cross, and were Eye-witnesses of these things; as Mary-Magdalen, and Mary the Mother of James and Joses, and Salome the Mother of John and the other James; with others.

O 4 57 & 58.

on, one Joseph of Arimather, a Rich Man, who fecretly believed on Jesus and embraced his Doctrine, desiring to preserve the Body of Jesus from the publick Ignominy of being cast out among the executed Malesactors, went to Pilate and begged leave that he might take away the Body and bury it; and Pilate gave him leave.

59 & 60. Then Foseph took down the Body, and having wound it in a clean Linen Cloth, he laid it in a new Sepulchre, which was a Cave in a Rock wherein he himself design'd to lie; and stopping it up with a great Stone,

he departed.

61. All this was observed by Mary Magdalene and the other Mary, who sat over against the Sepulchre, viewing the Place where Joseph laid the Body of Jesus, that when the Sabbath was over, they might come and embalm

62 & 63. The next Day, being the Sabbath in the Passover Week, some of the Chief-Priests and Pharisees came in a Body to Pilate, and said; Sir, we remember that this Impostor, when he was alive, said he would rise again from the Dead the third Day;

64. Be pleased therefore, that all further Deceit may be prevented, to appoint a Company of Soldiers to watch the Sepulchre till the three Days be past; lest, if his Disciples should steal him away in the Night, and then report it about, that he is risen from the Dead, the People should be more dangerously seduced than ever.

was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus disciple:

th

fe

fi

d

P

21

f

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jelus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Jofeph had taken the body, he wrappedit in a clean linen cloth,

60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and herolled a greatstone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, fitting over against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priefts and Pharifees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver faid while ye was yet alive, After threedays I willrife again.

64 Command there-

II,

even

here

n of

med

alfo

efus

it to

gged fus:

om-

y to

n Jo-

the .

edit loth,

it in

omb,

ewn

and

ftone

ne fepart-

was lene,

Tary, gainst

the low-

pre-

chief ifces

unto

Şir,

that

faid

et a-

days

nand heretherefore that the fepulchre be made fure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and fay unto the people, He is rifen from the dead: fo the last error shall be worse then the first.

65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as fecure as you can.

66 So they went and made the fepulchre fure, fealing the stone, and setting a watch.

65. Pilate, laughing within himfelf at their vain fear (as he thought,) bid them fet what Soldiers they would to watch, and make the Sepulchre as fure as they could.

66. Accordingly they went, and made all things fecure, (as they imagined,) fetting a Seal upon the Stone which stopt the Sepulchre, and appoint-

ing Soldiers to watch it.

#### C H A P. XXVIII.

Christ's Resurrection, ver. 1. His Appearance to Mary Magdalene, ver. 8. The Report of his Body being stolen, ver. 11. Christ's Appearance and last Instructions to his Disciples, ver. 16.

1 N the end of the fabbath, as it began to dawn, towards the first day of the week, came Magdalene, Mary and the other Mary, to fee the fepulchre. 1. NOW late in the Night after the Sabbath, \* when it began to be light, towards the Morning of the first Day of the Week; Mary Magdalene and the other Mary, having bought Spices and fweet Odours, came to the Sepulchre with an Intention to embalm the Body of Fefus.

<sup>\*</sup> About Three or Four a Clock on Sunday Morning.

2. And as they were in the way, they consulted between themselves, which way they should get the great Stone removed, with which they had seen Joseph of Arimathea stop up the Sepulchre. But when they came to the place, they found a great Trembling of the Earth, and Commotion: For an Angel had rolled away the Stone from the Mouth of the Sepulchre, and the Women saw the Angel sitting upon the Stone.

3. The Face of the Angel was like the bright shining of Lightning, and his Garments were white and glitter-

ing as the very Snow.

4. The Soldiers also, that were set to watch the Sepulchre, saw the Angel, and were affrighted almost to Death at that wonderful Sight.

5. But the Angel spake to the Women, and said; Be not ye frighted like these Men: I know that ye are come with a good Intention, to seek for Je-

fus that was crucified.

6. He is not here, dead as ye expect; but is risen again, according as he fore-told to his Disciples: And \* with these words the Angel rose up, and going into the Sepulchre before the Women, (who yet look'd sorrowful and doubting,) he stood by the place where Jesus had laid, and said; Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7. And go quickly, and tell his Difciples that he is rifen from the Dead. Moreover he himself will go before you into Galilee, and ye shall see him there.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake; for the angel of [the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

he

in

th

pa tl

fe

21

C

1

1

- 3 His countenance was likelightning, and his raiment white as snow.
- 4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.
- 5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here; for he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he isrisen from the dead: and behold

<sup>\*</sup> This Conjecture, tho' I have not yet feen it taken notice of by any Commentator, feems to be very agreeable to the Words, Dire, idere, and plainly reconciles what St. John relates; John 20, 12. This being one of the two Angels there mentioned.

#### St. MATTHEW. Chap. XXVII.

he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye fee him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the fepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his difciples, behold, Jefus met them, faying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then faid Jefus unto them, Be not afraid : go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they

fee me:

d

d

ľ

C

e

e

11 Now when they were going, behold fome of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

And when 12 were affemthey bled, with the elders, and had taken counfel, they gave large mony unto the foldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we

flept.

Observe that I have now foretold it you; and when it comes to pass, be not

faithless but believing.

8. Then the Women departing from the Sepulchre, and rejoicing at the News they had heard; yet frighted at the Appearance of the Angel, and fcarce believing what they had feen; they ran to give the Disciples notice.

9. And as they were going, Fesus himself met them and saluted them. At first they knew him not; but when he had made himself known to them, they fell down before him, and held him by the Feet, and adored him.

10. Then Fesus bad them, not be afraid; But go, faith he, and bid my Disciples, my Brethren, go into Gali-

lce, and there they shall see me.

11. Now when the Women were gone from the Sepulchre, fome of the Soldiers that watched, went into the City, and gave the Chief-Priests a particular Account, how they were frighted with an Earthquake and an Apparition, and how the Sepulchre was open'd and the Body gone. The Providence of God fo ordering Matters, that even the greatest Enemies of Christ, should themselves be forced to bear Testimony to the Truth of his Refurrection.

12 @ 13. But the Chief-Priests and Elders being now hardned beyond meafure in their Obstinacy, and having gone on in this Wickedness too far to retreat, called a Council; and instead of being convinced and brought to Repentance by this undeniable Evidence, they on the contrary came to a Refolution to bribe the Soldiers with a large Sum of Mony; to report it about, that while they were alleep, the the Disciples stole away the Body in the Night.

14. And they promifed the Soldiers, that if the Governor should hear of this thing, and call them to an Account for their Negligence and ill Performance of their Duty; they would undertake to pacify him, and engage to bear them harmless.

15. Accordingly the Soldiers, taking the Money, obey'd their Instructions; and the Report of Jesus's Body being stole by the Disciples, was entertain'd by the unbelieving Jews, and long continu'd among them.

Apostles went into Galileee, to a Mountain where Jesus had appointed to

meet them.

17. And there they saw him, and knew him, and were fully convinced of the Truth of his Resurrection, and worshipped him: Only some few had still Doubts and Scruples remaining in their Minds.

18. But Jesus afterwards appeared frequently to them, and gave all of them full Satisfaction, and instructed them in many things, relating to the preaching of the Gospel, and the establishing of the Church, and enlarging it through the whole Earth. And he said; God has now committed unto me full Power and Authority, over all things both in Heaven and Earth.

19. Go ye therefore and preach the Gospel to all the World; making Disciples out of † every Nation, and baptizing

14 And if this come to the governors ears, we will perfwade him, and fecure you. th

of

th

15 So they took the mony, and did as they were taught: and this faying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then theeleven disciples went away into Galilee into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

they faw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing

<sup>+</sup> The Extent of this Commission, as it seems by the History of Cornelius, Acts 10, the Apostles did not at first fully understand, till it was explained by the Holy Ghost:

them

#### Chap. XXVIII.

St. MATTHEW.

them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghoft:

II.

his

er-

vill ind

ok

did

ht:

is

ted

un-

ee-

ent

in-

ain ap-

nen
ney
n:
d.
fus
unAll
nto
in

reall ng

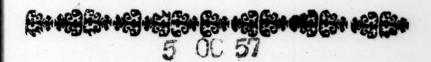
ry nd,

em

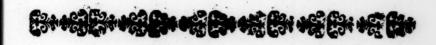
them with Water, In the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: That is, receiving them to a Profession of the Belief, and an Obligation to the Practise, of that Religion, which God the Father has revealed and taught by the Son, and confirmed and established by the Holy Ghost.

them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

obey all the Commandments which I have given you, as the Conditions of Salvation. And I, though I must depart from you into Heaven, and cannot be any longer with you personally; yet the Holy Ghost, whom I will send, shall always be with you, and shall guide, and assist, and preserve you and your Successors to the End of the World.



THE END.





BOOKS Written by the Reverend Dr Samuel Clarke; And Printed for James Knapton, at the Crown in St. Paul's Church Yard.

Discourse concerning the Being and Attributes of A God, the Obligations of Natural Religion, and the Truth and Certainty of the Christian Revelation. In An-Iwer to Mr Hobbs, Spinoza, the Author of the Oracles of Reason, and other Deniers of Natural and Revealed Religion. Being fixteen Sermons Preach'd at the Cathedral Church of St Paul, in the Years 1704 and 1705, at the Lecture Founded by the Honourable Robert Boyle Efq; The Fifth Edition, corrected. There are added in this Edition, feveral Letters to Dr Clarke from a Gentleman in Gloceftersbire, relating to the first Volume; with the Dr's Anfwers. price 6 s.

A Paraphrase on the four Evangelises. Wherein, for the clearer Understanding the Sacred History, the whole Text and Paraphrase are Printed in separate Columns over-against each other. Together with critical Notes on the more difficult Passages. Very useful for Families.

two Vols. The 4th Edition, 8vo. pr. 12 s.

Three Practical Effays on Baptism, Confirmation, and Repentance: Containing full Instructions for a holy Life, with earnest Exhortations, especially to young Persons, drawn from the Consideration of the Severity of the Difcipline of the Primitive Church. The Fourth Edition. Pr. 1 s. and for the Encouragement of the Charitable, 116 for 5 l. bound.

A Letter to Mr Dodwell; wherein all the Arguments in his Epistolary Discourse against the Immortality of the Soul, are particularly answered, and the Judgment of the

Fath

fom

or Wr Ner

Lea and

and

Let

frot the enti

ber 5

> ube ton

077

nes

edi

00

th

ex

pt

D

0

#### BOOKS Printed for J. KNAPTON.

Fathers concerning that Matter truly represented. Together with Four Letters in Answer to the Author of Remarks on the Letter to Mr Dodwell. To which is added, some Reflections on that part of a Book call'd Amyntor, or the Defense of Milton's Life, which relates to the Writings of the Primitive Fathers, and the Canon of the New Testament. The Fifth Edition pr. 4 s.

A Collection of Papers, which passed between the late Learned Mr Leibnitz, and Dr Clarke, in the Years 1715 and 1716; relating to the Principles of Natural Philosophy and Religion. With an Appendix. To which are added Letters to Dr Clarke concerning Liberty and Necessity; from a Gentleman of the University of Cambridge, with the Dr's Answers to them. Also Remarks upon a Book, entituled, A Philosophical Enquiry concerning human Liberty.

Six Sermons on feveral Occasions.

をは

Dr

les

l's

of

the

An-

s of

eli-

dral

the

The

on,

cef-

In-

the

ext

er-

he

In

nd

fe, as,

if-

n.

le,

its

he

be

rs

Jacobi Rohaulti Physica. Latine vertit, recensuit, & uberioribus jam Annotationibus ex illustrissimi Isaaci Newtoni Philosophia maximam partem haustis, amplificavit & omavit S. Clarke, S. T. P. Accedunt etiam in hac Quarta Editione, novæ aliquot Tabulææri incisæ; & Annotationes multum sunt auctæ, 8vo. pret. 8s.

If. Newtoni Optice. Latinè reddidit S. Clarke, S. T. P. C. Julij Cæfaris quæ extant, accuratissime cum Libris editis & MSS. optimis collata, &c. Accesserunt Annotationes S. Clarke. S. T. P.

The Scripture-Doctrine of the Trinity. In three Parts. Wherein all the Texts in the New Testament relating to that Doctrine, and the principal Passages in the Liturgy of the Church of England, are collected, compared, and explain'd. The Second Edition. price 6 s.

A Letter to the Reverend Dr Wells, Rector of Cotef-bach in Leicestersbire. In Answer to his Remarks, &c.

A Reply to the Objections of Robert Nelson Esq; and of an Anonymous Author, against Dr Clarke's Scripture-Doctrine of the Trinity; being a Commentary upon Forty select Texts of Scripture. To which is added, an Answer to the Remarks of the Author of some Considerations concerning the Trinity, and the Ways of managing that Controversy, in 8vo. pr. 45.

#### BOOKS Written by the Right Reverend Father in God, Benjamin Hoadly, D. D. Lord Bishop of Hereford.

THE Reasonableness of Conformity to the Church of England. To which is added, The brief Defense of Episcopal Ordination. The Third Edition. price 6 s.

The Original and Institution of Civil Government. dif-

cuffed. The Second Edition. price 5 s.

Eighteen Discourses concerning the Terms of Acceptance

with God. The Second Edition. price 5 s.

Several Tracts formerly published: Now collected into one Volume. To which are added Six Sermons never before published, 8vo. price 6 s.

The Measures of Submission to the Civil Magistrate

consider'd. The Fifth Edition. price 3 s.

A Preservative against the Principles and Practices of the

Nonjurors, &c. The Fifth Edition. pr. 1 s.

The Nature of the Kingdom or Church of Christ: A Sermon preached before the King, March, 31. 1717. The Fifteenth Edition. price 4d.

An Answer to the Reverend Dr. Snape's Letter. pr. 6 d. An Answer to the Representation drawn up by the Committee of the Lower House of Convocation, concerning several dangerous Positions and Doctrines contained in the Bishop of Bangor's Preservative and Sermon. The Second Edit. pr. 4s.

An Answer to a Calumny cast upon the Bishop of Bangor, by the Reverend Dr. Sherlock, at the Conclusion of his Book entitled, A Vindication of the Corporation and Test Acts, &c. pr. 3 d.

An Answer to a late Book written by the Reverend Dr. Sherlock, entituled, The Condition and Example of our Bleffed

Saviour vindicated. pr. I s.

The Common Rights of Subjects, defended: And the Nature of the Sacramental Test, consider'd. In Answer to the Dean of Chichester's Vindication of the Corporation and Test Acts. pr. 3 s. 6 d.

An Answer to the Reverend Dr Hare's Sermon: with a Postscript occasioned by the Lord Bp. of Oxford's late

Charge to his Clergy.

Six Sermons on feveral Occasions.

A

### PARAPHRASE

ONTHE

of

if-

ito

A

of

## GOSPEL

OF

# STMARK.

BY

SAMUEL CLARKE, D. D. Rector of St. James's Westminster.

THE FOURTH EDITION.

LONDON,

Printed for JAMES KNAPTON, at the Crown in St. Paul's Church-yard. 1722.



of fire



#### TO THE

Right Reverend Father in GOD,

# JOHN,

Lord Bishop of Norwich.

My Lord,



Our Lordship's kind
Opinion and favourable Encouragement of
my Design, was one

of the principal Motives that at first determined me to undertake

A 2 this

### Epistle Dedicatory.

this WORK, and afterwards to continue it. And if the Relation I have the Honour to bear to your Lordship, and the many particular Favours I have received from You, did not in Duty oblige me to take every Opportunity of making the gratefullest and most publick Acknowledgment of your Lordship's Kindness; yet your Lordship's known Readiness to Encourage, Assist, and Patronize any Attempts of this Nature, or any other that are defigned for the Promotion either of true Religion or good Learning; would have emboldened me among Others, to desire your Lordship's Protection, and to have presumed to do my felf the Honour of præfixing your Lordship's Name to these Papers.

I

an

pr

pr

lis

co

T

D

I

th

be

m

fu

ha

re

fo

of

ab

of

to

th

### Epistle Dedicatory.

r

n

0

g

S

n

d

1-

er

1-

1-

1-

f

0

I have used at least as much Care, and taken as much Pains, in the present Papers, to endeavour to express the full Meaning of the Evangelist in natural and plain Words, to continue the Sense by clear and easie Transitions, and to obviate all the Difficulties I could in the Text; as I did in the Paraphrase on St. Matthew. And, I suppose, it will not be thought a great Presumption in me to hope, that I have in some Meafure succeeded in this Design; after having received your Lordship's Corrections and Approbation, who have so throughly considered every Part of the Sacred Text, and are fo absolute a Master and known a Judge of Style.

To attempt upon this Occasion, to describe your Lordship's many other great Qualifications and Vertues;

A 3

25

### Epistle Dedicatory.

as it would be a Thing needless in Respect of the World, which every Day experiments many real Proofs of your Lordship's Goodness; so I know it would be to do a Thing unacceptable and uneasie to your Lordship. Wherefore I add no more, but only desire your Lordship to accept these Papers as an humble Expression of Duty and Gratitude, from

Your Lordship's most Dutiful Chaplain

and Servant,

Sam. Clarke.

THE



#### THE

### CONTENTS

OF THE

Gospel according to St. MARK.

ಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾರು ಬ್ಯಾಯಾರು ಮಾರ್ಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾಯಾ

#### CHAP. I.



·ss

ry

fs

I

n-

d.

re,

to

X-

m

ce.

E

O'n the Baptist's Office, ver. 1. Jesus baptiz'd, v 9. Tempted, v. 12. Jesus begins to preach, and describes the Dostrine of the Gospel in Sum, v. 14. Chuses Apostles, v. 16. How he gain a Respect among

the People, v. 22 Heals a Man possified, v. 23. and Peter's Mother-in-Law, and others, v. 29. And heals a Leper, v. 40.

A 4

CHAP.

#### CHAP. II.

Jesus cures a Palsie, and proves his Power of forgiving Sins, v. 1. Calls Matthew, and vindicates himself from the Charge of keeping ill Company, v. 13. Excuses his Disciples for not Fasting, v. 18. And for plucking Ears of Corn on the Sabbath-day, v. 23.

#### CHAP. III.

Jesus heals a wither'd Hand, and shows that positive Institutions must give Place to moral Duties, v. 1. Suffers not evil Spirits to declare who he was, v. 12. Chuses his twelve Apostles, v. 13. His Astions are misinterpreted by his Friends, v. 21. And blasphemed and attributed to the Devil, by the Pharisees, v. 22. Jesus proves his Divine Commission by the Greatness of his Works and by the Tendency of his Dostrine, v. 23, & 27. Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, v. 28: Jesus prefers his Disciples hefore his Relations, v. 31.

#### CHAP. IV.

The Parable of the Sower, with the Explication, v. 1, & 14. Why Jefus Spake in Parables, v. 11. Knowledge must be communicated, v. 21. Grace given proportionable to Mens Improvements, v. 24. Parable of Corn growing imperceptibly, v. 26. Of the Mustard-seed, v. 31. Why Je'us Spake in Parables, v. 33. Jesus stilleth a Storm, v. 35.

CHAP.

**Te** 

Je

J

#### CHAP. V.

Jesus dispossesses a Legion of Devils, v. 1. Heals a Bloody-flux, v. 25. Raises Jairus's Daughter, v. 35.

or-

in-

ill

ars

ofi-

ies,

vho

v. bis

bufus

of ne, loly

be-

V.

ace

v. v: us

m,

P.

#### CHAP. VI.

Jesus despised by his Country-men for the Meanness of his Parentage, v. 1. And therefore worked but sew Miracles among them, v. 5. He sends forth his Twelve Apostles to preach, v. 7. The Opinion of Herod and others concerning Jesus, v. 14. The Cause and Manner of John Baptist's Death, v. 17. The Apostles give an Account of the Success of their Preaching, v. 30. Jesus feeds five Thousand with five Loaves and two Fishes, v. 35. Walketh on the Water, v. 45. and healeth many Sick, v. 55.

#### CHAP. VII.

Jesus reproveth the Pharisees Hypocrisie, and explaineth at large the true Notion of Cleanness and Uncleanness, v. 1. Casteth out an evil Spirit at the importunate Request of a Syrophænician Woman, v. 24. Healeth a deaf and dumb Man, v. 32.

#### CHAP. VIII.

Jesus feedeth four Thousand with seven Loaves, v. 1. Resuses to give the Pharisecs a Sign from Heaven, v. 11. Advises his Disciples to beware of the Hypocrise of the Pharisees, and reproves

reproves them for not understanding an easie Figure of Speech, v. 14. Restores to a blind Man his Sight, v. 22. Asks his Disciples their own and other Mens Opinion concerning him, and foretels to them his Sufferings, v. 27. Exhorts to Perseverance and Patience under Assistions and Persecutions, v. 34.

Jel

T

#### CHAP. IX.

Jesus's Transfiguration, v. 1. He shows that John the Baptist was the Elias prophesied of by Malachi, v. 12. Casts out a Devil, and reproves his Disciples for not being able to do it for Want of Faith, v. 14. He acquaints his Disciples with his approaching Sufferings, v. 30. And, upon Occasion of their disputing about Preeminence, exhorts them to Humility and Charity, v. 32. He forbids them to hinder those that in any Manner promoted the Gospel, v. 38. And teaches that nothing must come in Competition with Religion, v. 43. The Punishment of evil Ministers, v. 49.

#### CHAP X.

Of Divorce, v. 2. Jefus blesses young Children, and rebukes his Disciples that would have hindred them from being brought, v. 13. Tells a rich young Man the Conditions of eternal Life under the Gospel, v. 17. Shews his Disciples the great Danger and Temptations of Riches v. 23. and the Happiness of Suffering for Religion, v. 28. Foretels his own Death, v. 32. Reproves his Disciples ambitious and worldly Thoughts, v. 35. Cures a blind Man, v. 46. CHAP.

#### CHAP. XI.

n

ıd

ts

ns

by

e-

or

i-

0.

e-

y, in

ıd

m

il

1-

a

es

V.

n,

ly

Jesus rideth into Jerusalem, v. 8. Curseth the Fig-Tree, v. 13. Casteth the Traders out of the Temple, v. 15. Of the Disposition of Mind necessary to Prayer, v. 24, 25. Jesus confounde h the Jews with a Question about John's Baptism, v. 27.

#### CHAP. XII.

The Parable of the Vineyard let out to wicked Hufbandmen, v. 1. applied to signific the casting off the Jews, and receiving the Gentiles, v. 10. Jetus answers the Pharisees, about paying Tribute to Casar, v. 14. And the Sadd cees, about the Resurression, v. 18. An the Scribe, upon a Question, which was the chief and most ne essary Part of the Law, v. 28. And shames them all with a Question about the Methah being David's both Sin and Lord, v. 35. He warms his Disciples against Ambition and Hypocrisie, v. 38. And shows from the Example of a poor tidow, that Piety and Charity is not to be measured by the outward Ast, but by the Intention and Zeal of the Mind, v. 41.

#### CHAP. XIII.

Jesus foretels the Destruction of Jerusalem; and wans all Men to watch, that they may not be supprized with Judgment temporal or eternal.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. XIV.

The Jews conspire to apprehend Jesus, v. 1. The Occasion of Judas's resolving to betray him, v. 3. Jesus eats the Passover with his Disciples, and foretels who should betray him, v. 12. Providence brings Good out of the evil Actions of bad Men, v. 21. Jesus institutes the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, v. 22. Foretels Peter's Denial, v. 27. His Agony, v. 32. He is betrayed by Judas, v. 43. and apprehended, v. 46. and tried by the High-Priest, v. 53. and condemned, v. 64. Peter's Denial, v. 66. and Repentance, v. 72.

#### CHAP. XV.

Jesus is brought before Pilate, v. 1. Pilate, contrary to his own Judgment, delivers him, upon the clamorous and tumultuous Demand of the Jews, to be crucified, v. 15. He is mocked and abused by the Soldiers, v. 16. and crucified, v. 20. and derided by the Jews, v. 29. Prodigies happen at his Death, v. 33. of which many were Witnesses, v. 39. Jesus buried by Joseph of Arimathæa, v. 42.

CHAP

Won

bi

at

tl

io

V

#### CHAP. XVI.

The

im,

ſci-

V.

vil

in-

er, His

v.

54. V.

m, of is 6.

b, v. a, Women coming to anoint the Body, are told by an Angel that Jesus is risen, v. 1. Jesus himself appears to Mary Magdalene, v. 9. and to Two of the Disciples, v. 12. and to the Eleven, v. 14. He gives them Instructions to Preach, v. 15. and ascends into Heaven, v. 19.



THE

P

Joh V

Go Cl

in ho fer far pa

y I P

# PARAPHRASE

Gospel of St. MARK.

#### CHAP. I.

John the Baptist's Office, ver. 1. Jesus baptiz'd, v. 9, Tempted, v. 12. Jesus begins to preach, and describes the Doctrine of the Gospel in Sum, v. 14. Chuses Apostles, v. 16. How he gain'd Respect among the People. v. 22. Heals a Man possessed, v. 23. and Peter's Mother-in-Law, and others, v. 29. And heals a Leper, v. 40.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God.

2 As it is written in the prophets, Behold I fend my Meffenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths strait.

4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. I. ERE beginneth the History of the Life and Doctrine of fesus Christ, the Son of God, and Saviour of Mankind.

2. Whose Appearance in the Flesh was ushered in by the Preaching of John the Baptist, as the Prophets had in old Time foretold concerning him. For so the Prophet Malachi, (Mal. 3. 1.) Behold I will send my Messenger, or Forerunner, and he shall prepare the Way before me.

3. And so likewise the Prophet Isaiah, (Isa. 40. 3.) The Voice of him that crieth in the Wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make strait in the Desart a High-way for our God.

4. According to these Predictions, when the Time drew near that the Son of God was to be manifested in the Flesh, John the Baptist appeared in the Wilderness of Judea, Preaching to all the People the Necessity of Repentance, of forsaking their Sins, and reforming their Lives; and signifying this to them by the sensible and external Sign

C

pai

tha

Na

and

Jo.

Wa

of

the

an

do

on

ca

he

ar

in

ple

at

W

th

n

ar

to

of baptizing with Water; that they might hereby be prepared to receive the Gospel, and fitted to be made Partakers of that Salvation, whereof Fefus was to be the Author and Publisher.

5. And a great Number of People, out of all the Cities and Towns of Judea, and of the Inhabitants of Jerufalem, reforted into the Wilderness to John, and were baptized by him in the River Jordan, confessing publickly the Sinfulness of their past Lives, and declaring their Resolutions of Amendment and Reformation.

6. Now the Course of John the Baptist's Life, as became him who was to invite Men to Repentance, was very severe and mortissed. He was cloathed in the poorest and meanest Sort of Garments, and fed only upon such coarse Provision as the barren Wilder-

ness afforded of it self.

And he declared to all those that professed their Repentance, and were baptized by him, that he himself was not the Messias who was to save them from their Sins, but only his Forerunner to prepare them by Repentance to receive and be capable of that Salvation. For the Messas, said he, who will shortly appear, is a Person of far greater Dignity and Authority than I; io that I am not worthy to do the very meanest Offices of Service to him. And by how much he is a greater Person; by so much also will his Office and Preaching be more excellent and effectual, and to greater and diviner Purposes than mine.

8. For I indeed, only baptize you with Water, to fignifie by this outward Sign the Necessity of Repentance: But

5 And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerufalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their fins.

6 And John was clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loyns: and he dideat locusts and wild honey:

7 And preached, faying, There cometh one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 And

I.

ent

the

and

m,

pti-

ri-

on-

was

nels

h a

1 2-

and

and

hed,

CO-

tier

the

nose

or-

WR

nave

vith

shall

vith

And

o And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

no And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit, like a dove descending upon him.

art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the angels ministred unto him. But he, when he comes, shall pour down upon you his holy Spirit, which by its inward Affistance shall powerfully and efficaciously purifie and fanctifie the Minds of all those, who by true Repentance prepare themselves to receive his Doctrine and Salvation.

9. ¶ While John was thus Preaching and Baptizing, Jefus himfelf came out of Galilee from Nazareth; and, for a standing Instance of Humility and Readiness to comply with all Things that might any way promote true Piety, he would needs be baptized by John among the rest of the People.

10. But tho' in Humility he equalled himself to the Meanest of the People, yet by the miraculous Power and immediate Testimony of God, he was very extraordinarily distinguished from them. For as soon as he was baptized, and came out of the River, the Heavens appeared to open, and the Spirit of God descended, and rested upon him in a visible Form.

11. And there was heard at the fame time a Voice out of Heaven, faying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleafed.

12. ¶ Presently after this, Jesus by the Impulse and Direction of the Spirit of God, was carried into the Wilderness.

13. And there he continued in a folitary Place, among the wild Beafts, Forty Days and Forty Nights, in Fafting and Prayer: And was tempted by the Devil with many Temptations: But he overcame them all, and the Devil fled from him, and good Angels came and comforted him, and fupplied him with Necessaries after his long Fast.

B 14

h

tl

Ja

bi

W

m

an

fa

fh

fer

aft

ftr

fat

gu

aft

do

tau

tha

and

in t

ma

fpir

out

, 2

usa

we

reth

kno

tho

one

14. ¶ Thus Jesus kept himself retired for the most part, during John Baptist's Preaching. But when John was apprehended and put in Prison by Herod, than Jesus began to travel openly through Galilee, declaring and preaching the Doctrine of the Gospel.

15. And he faid: The Time which the Wisdom of God predetermined, which the holy Men of Old hoped for, and which the ancient Prophets expresly foretold, to bring in and establish the Kingdom of the Messiah; is now accomplished. The Ceremonies and Ritual Observances of the Law, are shortly to cease; and God is about to make the last Revelation of his Will to Mankind, wherein Righteousness only and Sincerity of Heart shall be required and accepted. Repent ye therefore, and embrace and obey this Doctrine.

16. ¶ Having thus begun to raise in Mens Minds some Expectation of his Doctrine; he proceeded to choose certain Disciples, to be constant Witnesses of his Doctrine and Miracles, and to be sent forth to publish them through the World. Walking therefore on the Shore of the Lake of Genesareth, he saw Two Brothers that were Fisher-men, Peter and Andrew, employed in the Business of their Calling.

17. And he faid to them; Follow me, and I will fet you about a more divine and noble Employment. From henceforth ye shall catch Men; Drawing them by the Power and Efficacy of your Doctrine, from the Ignorance and Wickedness of the World, to the Knowledge of God and the Obedience of his Commands.

18. Upon which Invitation, the Two Brothers immediately quitted their Cal14 Now after that John was put in prifon, Jefus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God.

The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the gospel.

16 Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers.)

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to be come fishers of men.

18 And straightway they for look their nets, and sollowed him.

19 And

hat

ori-

nto

ing

the

ng,

lled,

n of

re-

lieve

lie

e fea

faw

drew

afting

fea:

e fish-

us faid

Come

and I

ito be-

f men.

raight-

forfook

and fol-

19 And

1.

10 And when he had gone a little further thence, he faw lames the fon of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired fervants, and went after him.

21 And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the labbath-day he entred into the fynagogue, and taught.

22 And they were aftonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

23 And there was in their fynagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jeius of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God,

ling, and went with Fesus; and became from that Time his conftant Disciples and Followers.

19. Then Fesus going on a little further, faw Two other Brethren, Fames and John, the Sons of Zebedee; likewise were Fishermen. And they

were mending their Nets.

20. And he called them also: they in like manner as the others had done, leaving without delay both the Company of their Friends; and the Gain of their Employment, came ashore, and followed Fesus.

21. Accompanied with these his Disciples, Jesus entred the great and populous City of Capernaum, taught in their Synagogues on the Sabbath-Days the Doctrine of true Religi-

on and Righteoufnels.

And the People were furprized and aftonished at his Doctrine. For his Teaching was not like that of Their Doctors, trifling and formal, founded on vain Traditions and groundless Authorities of other Rabbies; but the Things which he spake were great and excellent, and he delivered them with a Voice of Authority and Truth.

23. I Now on a certain Sabbathday, as he was teaching in their Synagogue, there was prefent a Man poffeffed with a Devil: And this gave Fesus an Occasion of confirming his Doctrine, which before appear'd admirable in itfelf, by the additional Proof of a great

Miracle.

For the evil Spirit in the Man, 24. not bearing the Presence and Power of Fesus, cried out aloud, saying, O thou Fesus of Nazareth, art thou come to destroy us, and to take away our Power over Mankind? Surely the Time wherein God has permitted us to be let loofe, is not yet ended; I know who you are,

the Messiah, the Son of God.

25. But Jesus choosing rather to prove his Divine Authority by the Evidence of the Spirit of God, and his Power in casting out the Devil, than by suffering that evil and lying Spirit to bear Testimony concerning him, commanded it to be silent, and come out of the Man.

\* σπαςώξαν. 26. Then the evil Spirit \* convulfing the Man terribly, and giving a great Cry, came out, and the Man was pre-

fently healed.

27. And the whole Congregation was filled with great Admiration: And they faid one to another, What is the Meaning of this? What Doctrine, and what Teacher is this, that he fpeaks with fuch Authority, and acts with fuch Power, as that the very Devils themselves fubmit to his Command!

28. And the Fame of Jesus, of his excellent Doctrine, and of his wonderful Power, quickly spread itself over all

the Country.

29. ¶ Now when Jesus came out of the Synagogue, He and James and John \* went into the House of Peter and Andrew.

\* See Note on Luk.4.38.

30. And as foon as he came in, they told him that *Peter*'s Wife's Mother lay there fick of a Fever.

31. Then Jesus going into the Room where she lay, took her by the Hand, and raised her up; and she immediately not only recovered from her Fever, but also returned so to her perfect Health and Strength, that she went about the House, and provided Necessaries for them, and served them.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean fpirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, infomuch that they queflioned among themfelves, faying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean fpirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame was fpread abroad throughout all the region round about

Galilee.

29 And forthwith when they were come out of the fynagogue, they entred into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

h

tt

t

it

30 But Simons wives mother lay fick of a fever, and anon they tell him

of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lift her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministred unto them.

32 And

d

e

d

n,

re

0-

le-

m-

nat

nat

is?

ity

e-

spi-

0-

edi-

was

oad

the

out

vith

were

e fy-

en-

ouse

An-

mes

nons

· lay

and

him

came

y the

t her

diate-

her,

ed un-

And

32 And at even, when the fun did fet, they brought unto him all that were difeased, and them that were posses'd with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were fick of divers difeases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

35 And in the morning, rifing up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a folitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after

him.

37 And when they had found him, they faid unto him, All men feek for thee.

38 And he faid unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach therealfo: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their fynagogues throughout all Galilee, and caft out devils.

32. And at Sun-set, as soon as the Sabbath was past, that the People thought it lawful to begin any Work, they brought to Jesus many diseased and possess described and possess described and possess described as the same diseased as the s

33. And such a vast Multitude of People gathered together about the House, to see what was done; that almost the

whole City feemed to be there.

34. And Jesus healed all that were brought to him, so that at that one Time he cured many Kinds of Diseases, and cast out many Devils, and suffered not the evil Spirits to declare that they knew him; for he needed not their Testimony, but prov'd his Divine Commission by the more satisfactory Evidence of the Goodness of his Doctrine, and the Greatness of his Works.

35. The next Morning very early, before Day, Jesus arose and retired into

a defert Place to pray privately.

36. But *Peter* and the rest of his Disciples, missing him, went out after him

to feek him.

37. And when they had found him, they told him, that all the People in the Town waited for him, and fought after him.

38. But Jefus faid, Nay, Imust not return to Capernaum: I am not fent to preach to one City only, but must

go about to others also.

39. And he travelled through all the Towns of Galilee, preaching in their Synagogues, and wonderfully confirming his Doctrine by Miracles of healing Diseases, and casting out Devils.

B 3

40.

CI

inte

wa

fer

can

eve

Jef

Car

for

wa

wa

2

ma

tog

tha

roc

the

mu

do

ed

the

one

fie,

COL

un

the

100

bro let when

40. ¶ About this time there came to Fesus a Man that had the Leprosie, and kneeled down before him, and said; Lord, I have heard of your wondrous Works, and do believe that, if you please, you are able to cure me immediately of this offensive Disease.

Man's Complaint and humble Entreaty, and pleased at his Faith, touched him with his Hand, and said; I am willing to do what you desire; Be cleansed from your Disease.

42. Which Words were no fooner fpoken, but the Leprofie in an inftant utterly disappeared, and the Man was perfectly clean.

43 & 44. Then Fesus, that the People might not at the Report of this Miracle come about him too tumultuously, like raising a Sedition: and also to prevent any Occasion of Calumny from the Priests; sent away the Man with a strict Charge, saying; Do not report this Thing abroad publickly; but go and shew your felf to the Priest, that he may try you and pronounce you clean; and then offer according to Custom what the Law appoints upon this Occasion; that the Jews may be convinced, and have no Handle to reproach us.

45. But the Man overjoyed at the Greatness and Suddenness of his Cure, could not forbear reporting every where what Jesus had done for him; insomuch, that the Admiration of the People was so raised, and they flocked in such Multitudes after Jesus, that he could not for a while appear openly in a Town, but retired into soli-

40 And there came a leper to him, befeeching him, and kneeling down to him, and faying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canft make me clean.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and faith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And as foon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straightly charged him, and forthwith fent him away;

44 And faith unto him, See thou fay nothing to any man: but go thy way, flew thy felf to the prieft, and offer for thy cleanfing those things which Moses commanded for a testimony unto them.

45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, infomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into

II.

here

im.

and

1 to

wilt,

mopaffihis

ched

unto

thou

foon

,im-

from was

ight.

and

him

unto

a fay

any

thy

y felf

nd of-

nfing

hich

nded

unto

went

n to

, and

d the

nuch

d na

enter

into

into the city, but was without in defertplaces: and they came to him from every quarter. tary Places, and People followed him from all Parts.

#### CHAP. II.

Jesus cures a Palsie, and proves his Power of forgiving Sins, v. 1. Calls Matthew, and vindicates himself from the Charge of keeping ill Company, v. 13. Excuses his Disciples for not Fasting, v. 18. And for plucking Ears of Corn on the Sabbath-day, v. 23.

A N Dagain he entred into Capernaum, after fome days, and it was noised that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, infomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they came unto him, bringing one fick of the palfie, which was born of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for prefs, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed, wherein the fick of the palfie lay.

1. A Fter fome time Jesus returned again to Capernaum; and though he entred privately, and went unto Peter's House, yet the People soon heard of his being there.

2. And there reforted to him a great Multitude, more than the House and Yard could hold; and he preached to them.

3. And while he was preaching, there came a Company bringing a Man that had the Palsie, who was lame and disabled to such a Degree, that he was forced to be carried in his Bed upon Mens Shoulders.

4. And when they could not get near enough to bring him to Fefus, by reason of the Croud; they uncovered the Top of the House, and let down the sick Man in his Bed through the Roof, and set him before Fesus.

B 4 5. When

5. Jesus, pleased with the Greatness of the fick Man's and his Friends Faith, said to him; Son, your Sins

are forgiven you.

6 & 7. Now there were present certain Pharisees and Jewish Doctors in the Room, who hearing Jesus say these Words, thought presently within themselves; what a great Blasphemy is this, that this Man should pretend to assume to himself the Power of God! For, surely, none but God can forgive Sins, and he has never communicated this Power absolutely to any Man.

8. But Jesus knowing their secret Thoughts and Mutterings, prevented them, saying; Why are ye thus offended without Cause, and reason so maliciously within your

felves?

9. For is it not as easie a Thing to forgive a Man's Sins, which are the Cause of Diseases; as to heal his Disease by a Word in an instant? And cannot the same Power, which does the one, do the other also?

10 & 11. That ye may fee therefore and be convinced by this visible Effect, that I have really Power to forgive Sins even here upon Earth, ye shall fee the Man thus instantly healed: Then turning himself to the sick Man, he said; Rise, take up your Bed, and carry it Home with you.

Man's Strength returned perfectly to him, fo that he rose and took up his Bed, and carried it away with him thro' the Croud. And the Peo-

5 When Jesussaw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

Chap. II.

6 But there were certain of the scribes fitting there, and reafoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus fpeak blafphemies? who can forgive fins but God

ł

only?

8 And immediately, when Jesus perceived in spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say unto the fick of the palsie, Thy fins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk?

no But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive fins, (he faith to the fick of the palfie)

II I fay unto thee, Arife, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up his bed, and went forth before them all, infomuch that they were all amazed, and gloristed God, saying, We ne-

CI

· II.

Islaw

e faid

of the

ly fins

Were

cribes

id rea-

learts,

h this

c blaf-

o can

t God

diate-

s per-

, that

foned

elves,

liem,

thefe

your

is it

tothe

palfie,

given

y, A-

ip thy

e may

e Son

ower

rgive

th to

palfie)

thee,

ke up

o thy

iouie.

medi-

took

went

them

that

ama-

rified

le ne-

VCT

ee.

ver faw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the fea-fide, and all the multitude reforted unto him, and he taught them.

14. And he passed by, and saw Levi the fon of Alpheus sitting at the receit of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

15 And it came to pass that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and finners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the ScribesandPharifees faw him eat with publicansandfinners, they faid unto his difciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and finners?

17 When Jefus heard it, he faith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I am came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

ple were aftonished, saying, that they never saw any thing like this before; and they praised God, for sending among them so great a Prophet.

13. ¶. After this, Jesus retired again out of the City to the Lake's fide: And a great many People followed him, and he preached to them there.

14. And as he was going, he paffed by the Booth where the Collectors of the Tax sate, among whom was Matthew the Son of Alphaus. Him Jesus called as he went by; and he rose up without Delay, and left his Employment, and followed Jesus.

15. And he invited Jesus and his Disciples home with him to Dinner; whither were likewise invited many of Matthew's former Acquaintance, Collectors of the Taxes, and Men of ill Fame: And they all sat down together.

16. Which when some of the Jewish Doctors and Pharises observed;
they upbraided the Disciples, saying:
If your Master pretends to be a holy and pious Person, why doth he
not observe, what all strict and religious Jews carefully do, to abstain
from the impure Company of Publicans, loose Persons, and Men of bad
Reputation?

17. But Jesus replied: † The prin- † See Pacipal Design of my Coming into raphr. on the World, was to convert such Per-Luke 5.31. sons as these, from a Life of Sin, to Righteousness and Holiness. As therefore ye blame not a Physician for conversing with sick Men, but on the contrary look upon it as

th

th

an be

W

in

th

fie

da

pl

ea

B

0

tl

n

h

t

his proper Business and Duty: So neither ought ye to find Fault with me for keeping Company with wicked Men, whom I am sent into the World on purpose to reclaim by my Doctrine and Conversation.

18. ¶ About this Time, some of the Disciples of John the Baptist and of the Pharifees, who had been brought up in constant Fasting and great Austerity of Life, wondring to fee Fesus and his Disciples live in a freer Manner without that Strictness and Severity, came to Fefus and asked him, faying; How comes it to pass, that fince you seem to undertake to preach a more excellent and refined Doctrine to the World than hath hitherto been taught by any one, yet you fuffer your Disciples to be less strict in keeping Fasts, and less fevere in their way of living than we?

would be very abfurd for Guests invited to a Wedding, to fast, so long as the Bridegroom is with them, and the Solemnities of the Marriage-Feast continue; so it would be very unsit for my Disciples to enter into a Course of Life of great Abstinence and Severity, while I am personally present with them. But afterwards, when I am departed from them, they shall have Occasion enough of Fasting and Mourning.

21 & 22. Every thing is to be used in its proper Place and Season. As it is not convenient to piece old Cloth with new, or to put new and strong Wine into \* old and decay'd Bottles: So it would be very improper for me, when I am instruc-

18 And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come, and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees sast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jefus faid unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.

will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

21 No man also feweth a piece of new clothon an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new winedoth burst

\* See Note on Matt.

ifci-

nd of

ed to

ome,

nim,

ifci-

nd of

fast,

s fast

faid

the

ide-

hile

1 is

ong

the

vith

not

lays

the

l be

om

hall

nose

alfo

of

old

the

lled

vay

the rfe. out-

the irf the the old bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 And it came to pass, that he went through the cornfields on the sabbathday, and his disciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

24 And the Pharifees faid unto him, Behold, why do they on the fabbath-day that which is not lawful?

25 And he faid unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high-priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests, and gave alfo to them which were with him.

ting my Disciples, and sending them into the World to preach the Gospel, to lay upon them heavy Injunctions of Fasting and external Severities.

23. ¶. At another Time, as Fefus was walking through the Corn-Fields, his Disciples, being hungry, began to pluck the Ears, and to rub out the Corn and eat it: And it happen'd to be the Sabbath-Day.

24. Which the Pharifees observing, presently upbraided Jesus, saying; See, how your Disciples break the Sabbath; You who pretend to be a Teacher of great and extraordinary Holiness, why do you not reprove them?

25. Fesus reply'd: God never defign'd by any positive and ritual Institutions, such as the strict Fewish Observation of the Sabbath, and the like, to drive Men into extreme Hardships and Necessities. For do you not remember how David in a like Case behaved himself, when he was hungry and in a great Strait?

26. How \* about the time of A-\* Under biathar's being High-Priest, he went Abimelech, into the Tabernacle, and himself and who was all his Company eat of the Shew-Abiathar's Bread; which it was as unlawful for Father. any, except the Priests, to eat, as it is to neglect the strict Observation of the Sabbath: And yet David is no where blam'd for thus satisfying a Necessity of Nature, by the Breach of a positive Institution.

ed

W

the

the

hir

to

fa

27. From this Instance therefore 'tis evident, that ritual and positive Institutions, fuch as referving the Shew-Bread for the Priests only to eat, and the strict Jewish Observation of the Sab ath, and others of the same kind, are not like Duties of moral and eternal Obligation, indispensably to be observ'd in whatsoever Extremity or Necessity a Man may be; but were appointed by God. only for the present Use of Man, to be subfervient in affifting to the more convenient Practife of the great Duties of Religion.

28. So that in extraordinary Cases your rigid and strict Observation of the Sabbath may lawfully be relaxed by any Man, and therefore surely may be dispensed with by \* Me.

97 And he faid unto them, The fabbath was made for man, and not man for the fabbath:

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

\* See Note on Matt. 12. 8.

#### CHAP. III.

Jesus heals a wither'd Hand, and shows that positive Institutions must give place to Moral Duties, v. 1. Suffers not evil Spirits to declare who he was, v. 12. Chuses his Twelve Apostles, v. 13. His Actions are misinterpreted by his Friends, v. 21. And blashhemed and attributed to the Devil, by the Pharisees, v. 22. Jesus proves his Divine Commission by the Greatness of his Works and by the Tendency of his Doctrine, v. 23 & 27. Blashhemy against the Holy Gkost, v. 28. Jesus prefers his Disciples before his Relations, v. 31.

1. NOW when Jesus returned to Capernaum, he went again into the Synagogue to teach, according to his Custom, on the Sabbath-Day: And there was present a Man with a withered Hand, having the Flesh wasted away and dried up.

A Nd he entered again into the fynagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

2. And

III. e faid he fabde for t man th:

ore the

Lord

bath.

nstitu-

rs not

es his

preted

ibuted

es bis

by the

gainst

before

2 And they watchedhim, whether he would heal him on the fabbath-day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he faith unto the man that had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he faith untothem, Is it lawful to do good on the fabbath-days, or to doevil? to favelife, orto kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he faith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6 And the Pharifees went forth, and ftraightway took counsel with theHerodians against him, how they might deftroy him.

# St. MARK.

2. Upon which Occasion the Pharifees again watched Jesus, to see what he would do; thinking they should have another fair Opportunity of accusing him, if he should heal the Man on the Sabbath-Day.

3. But Fesus knowing their Malice and Superstition, and designing to expose the Unreasonableness of both in the Prefence of the whole Congregation, bad the lame Man come out of his Seat, and stand forth before

them all.

Then turning himself to the Pharisees, he said: I appeal to your selves, judge ye; Which is the best Keeping of the Sabbath, and most acceptable to God? to do a good Work, of great Necessity and Charity? Or, to neglect doing it, on Pretence of resting on the Sabbath? To fay, It ought to be forborn, they were ashamed and afraid, in the Presence of the People; and to fay, It ought to be done, was to vindicate Fesus. Not knowing therefore what to anfwer, they held their Tongues.

5. Then Jesus looking about with Anger and Grief in his Face, (angry at their obstinate Malice, and grieved at their incurable Blindness, that they would not receive his gracious Affiftance,) bad the lame Man hold out his Hand; and when he held it out,

it was presently healed.

Upon this the Pharifees went out; and finding they were not any other way able to withftand the Power of Jesus's Miracles, and the Authority of his Doctrine, fo as to prevent its being embraced by the People; they resolved to form a Con-

ipiracy

itered to the there there

ither-

. And

ur

an

W

21

hi

ed

fh

fe

spiracy against his Life; and began to plot with the Followers of Herod which way they might effect this Defign.

7. But Jesus, aware of their malicious Delign, retired with his Disciples from Capernaum to the Lake's side; and many Jews and Galilaans followed him.

8. Many of the Inhabitants of Ferusalem also, and Idumæans, and Peræans; and People from the Sea-Coasts toward Tyre and Sidon, having heard the Fame of his mighty Works, came out after him.

9. And so great at last was the Multitude which gathered about him, that he was forced to order a Boat to attend him near the Shore, that he might go into it to avoid the Croud, and preach from thence to the People.

10. For, during his stay in that Place, he had wrought many Miracles, and particularly healed many Diseases; so that the People crouded and pressed upon him, to bring near all sorts of diseased Persons to touch him.

II. He cast out Devils also out of Men Possessed: Who as soon as they saw him, would run and kneel down before him, and confess him to be the Messah the Son of God.

12. But Jesus suffered not the evil Spirits to bear Testimony concerning him. And because only his own Works and Doctrine could give the truest Character of his Person and Office; therefore he forbad the Men also, whom he had dispossessed and cured, to report publickly that he was the Mession among the

7 But Jestis withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea; and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea.

8 And from Jerufalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heardwhat great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

no For he had healed many, infomuch that they preffed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

fpirits, when they faw him, fell down before him, and crying, faying, Thou art the Son of God.

ly charged them, that they should not make him known.

is And

sus called.

בני ידעש

in the Syri-

ack Pro-

nunciation

Boanerges,

that is,

III.

with-With o the mul-Falilee

, and

Jeruom Im beand reand

multhey great came

keto that a hould cause itude, hould

e had infoprefor to many

nclean nthey down d cry-

Thou God. straitn,that make

And

12 And he goeth upinto a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto

14 And he ordainedtwelve, that they should be with him, and that he might fend them forth to preach:

15 And to have power to heal fickneffes, and to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he furnamed Peter.

17 And James the fon of Zebedee, and John the brother of lames (and he furnamed them Boanerges, which is, The fons of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the fon of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite.

19 And Judas Ifcariot, which alfo betrayed him: and they went into an house.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not fo much as eat bread.

Jews who were already prejudiced with false Notions concerning that Matter.

13 & 14. ¶ At another time, Fesus being upon a Hill with his Disciples about him, he chose out Twelve Men, whom he called Apostles, to attend him constantly, to be Witnesses of his Doctrine and Miracles, and to affift in Preaching the Gospel both before and after his Death.

15. And he communicated to them a Power of working the same Miracles for the Confirmation of their Doctrine, as he himself worked; fuch as healing the Sick, casting out Devils, and the like.

16---19. Now the Names of the Twelve were these:

> 1. Simon, whom Jesus called Peter.

2. James, Sons of \* Zebedee. \*Thefe Je-3. Fohn,

4. Andrew

5. Philip,

6. Bartholomew,

7. Matthew,

8. Thomas,

9. Another James, Son of Al-Sons of Thunder, pheus,

10. Thaddaus, or Jude,

principal 11. Simon, the Canaanite, or Ze- Ministers of the Gof-

12. Judas Iscariot, who betray-pel. ed fesus.

These Twelve Jesus carried home with him † to his House at Capernaum. And as foon as the People Mat. 4. 13. heard they were there, they gathered together again, and pressed after them so much, as hardly to give them time to eat.

21. Which

Ch

2

to y

be fo

fons

blaf

wit

fhal!

29

blat

the l

but

terr

faic

cle

the

his

fta

fer

lin

tu

an

hi

th

W

th

ec

21. Which when Jesus's Friends heard, they said his Zeal carried him too far, so as to make him neglect even the necessary Refreshments of Nature: And they came to endeavour to lay hold on him, and secure him.

22. ¶ But the Pharifees and Jewish Doctors who came down from Ferusalem to Capernaum, reviled him with the highest Degree of Malice, saying he was possessed and had a Devil. And particularly when they saw him one day with Authority cast a Devil out of a possessed Person, they said he did it by secret Confederacy with the Prince of Devils.

23. But Jesus, to reprove their obstinate and implacable Malice, replied; How can ye think the Devil dispossesses Devils, and fights against himself?

24 & 25. For as it is impossible that a Kingdom or Family, which is divided into Parties and Factions with-

in it felf, can long fubfift:

26. Even so if the Devils act against themselves, and disposses one another, and That in Confirmation of a Doctrine directly opposite to their whole Power and Interest; this is absurdly to suppose them doing that which must of Necessity destroy their own Kingdom.

27. When you fee the House of a strong Man broken up, and his Goods carried away by Force; you make no doubt, but he that thus spoileth the other, is stronger and more powerful than the Person spoiled. Why then is it not as evident to you, that if I cast the Devils out

21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

And the fcribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he outdevils.

23 And he called them unto him, and faid unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdom be divided against it self, that kingdom cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against it felf, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rife up against himfelf, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

28 Ve-

it, lay

for

ide

the

me

ıfa-

ath by

de-

de-

lled

and

pa-

Sa-

?

ng-

20

hat

not

use

t it

tan

m-

led,

but

en-

ong

and

ex-

ind

and

his

Ve-

28 Verily I fay unto you, All fins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme.

29 But he that shall blaipheme against the Holy Ghost, hath never for giveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

31 ¶ There came then his brethren and his mother, and flanding without, fent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude fat about him, and they faid unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without feek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying,

of their Possession with Authority, and in Confirmation of a Doctrine directly contrary to their Interest, this cannot be done by Confederacy or Agreement with them, but only because I have greater Power and Authority than they.

of me, can proceed from nothing but the most open and extreme Malice, Wherefore tho' all other Sins and Blasphemies whatsoever, may be forgiven unto Men; yet this blaspheming the Holy Ghost, by ascribing the undeniable Works of the Spirit of God to the Power of the Devil, being an obstinate and malicious resisting the last Means which God thinks sit to make use of for the Conviction and Salvation of Men, excludes them from all the Means of Forgiveness.

30. This fevere Sentence Jesus passed upon the blaspheming Pharises, because when they could not deny the Truth of his Miracles, they maliciously represented them to the People as done by the Assistance of

the Devil.

31. ¶ But to return to the Hiftory. As Fesus was sitting in the \*\* Ver. 20. House, and teaching the People, his Mother and other Relations came to ask for him.

32. And because the Croud was so great, that they could not get into the House; therefore those that sat next him, told him that his Mother and his Kinsmen waited at the Door to speak with him.

33. Jesus replied; Who is my Mother? and who are my Kinsmen?

Do .

Cha

hold,

afow

pass

fome

fide ,

of th

devo

fton

it I earth ately

beca

dept

fun '

fcor

cauf it w

7

amo

thet

and

it yi

Do you think that I esteem People by natural Relation, or by any temporal Considerations?

34. And turning about to his Disciples who sat round him, he said: No; but These are most properly my Kinsmen and Relations.

35. For the who attentively hear the Word of God, and believe and obey the Doctrine of true Religion; those are they whom I account my nearest Relations, and shall treat them as such.

Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked roundabout on them which fat about him, and faid, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For who foever thall do the will of God, the fame is my brother, and my fifter, and mother.

### CHAP. IV.

The Parable of the Sower, with the Explication, v. 1 & 14. Why Jesus spake in Parables, v. 11. Knowledge must be communicated, v. 21. Grace given proportionable to Mens Improvements, ver. 24. Parable of Corn growing imperceptibly, v. 26. Of the Mustard-seed, v. 31. Why Jesus spake in Parables, v. 33. Jesus stilleth a Storm, v. 35.

1. A Fter this, Jefus retired again to the Lake's fide; and the People followed him out of the City. And when the Multitude grew fo great as to croud him, that he could not conveniently stand on the Ground and be heard; he went into a Boat, and the People stood before him along the Shore.

2. And he taught them many Things by way of Comparison or Similitude. Particularly, he represented the Doctrine of the Gospel, and the Effect it has upon Men of various Tempers and Dispositions, by this following Similitude.

A ND he began again to teach by the fea-fide: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude; fo that he entred into a ship, and fat in the fea, and the whole multitude was by the fea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and faid unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken

her,

ked hem

bout

Be-

and

ever

ll of

s my

my er.

: &:

ledge

le to

wing

Why

, V.

egan

each

and

ered

great

that

ship,

,and

tude

on

ught

ings faid

his

rken

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a fower to fow.

4 And it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the wayfide, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.

5 And some fellon stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the fun wasup, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And fome fell among thorns, and thethorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

# St. MARK.

3. Hearken, faith he, and attend to what I fay. A certain Husbandman went out to fow his Ground. Christ, or the Preacher of the Gospel, publishes the Doctrine of true Religion amongst Men.

4. And as he was fowing, some of the Seed fell upon the hard beaten Road, where it never entered the Earth at all, but the Birds picked it up and destroyed it. Thus the Gospel is preached to some, who never regard it or confider it at all, but prefently forget what they have heard; and the flight Impressions it makes upon them, very foon wear out.

5 & 6. And some of the Seed fell upon Stones covered with thin Earth, where it presently grew up indeed, but without Root, so that as soon as the Sun came to shine hot upon it, it wither-Thus the Doctrine of true ed away. Religion is preached to others, who entertain it indeed readily, and are pleased with it, and in some measure also resolve to obey it; but for want of Steddiness and Constancy of Mind, they are overcome by Temptations, especially by Persecution, and fall away from their Obedience to the Truth.

7. Again, some other of the Seed, fell among Weeds, which springing up together with the Corn, over-ran it, and defroyed it: Thus fome others hear the Doctrine of Christianity, who likewife entertain it indeed, and pretend to obey it; but the Hurry of Business, and the deceitful Cares of Riches, and the Allurements of Pleasures do so take up their Thoughts and divert their Minds, that Religion has little Influence upon their Lives and Con-

C 2 vertations, versations, to produce real and substantial Acts of Piety and Charity.

8. Lastly, some of the Seed sell into good Ground, where it grew up and increased, and came to ripeness, and brought forth good Corn, some more, some less; Thus the Doctrine of true Religion, when it is preached in the World, meets with some honest and well-disposed Persons, who both hear it willingly, and believe it heartily, and obey it sincerely, and persevere in that Obedience resolutely and constantly; bringing forth the Fruits of Holiness and of all Vertues, according to their several Dispositions, Abilities, and Callings.

9. Whoever is capable and desirous of Instruction, let him hear and con-

fider what I fay.

rables spake Jesus to the People; expressing the Similitudes only, without adding their Interpretation: And when the People were gone, his Apostles and Disciples desired him privately to explain these Things clearly to them.

ri. Then faid Fesus: To you indeed, God has vouchsafed to reveal clearly and plainly all the great Truths relating to the State of the Gospel, and the Kingdom of the Messiah: But the mixt Multitude are not yet capable nor worthy of this Privilege. For the greatest Part of them have such strong Prejudices, that they will not understand the plainest Doctrines, nor be convinced by the clearest Truths: Wherefore, I speak to them in Parables only, that all such may yet continue ignorant, who despise

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that fprang up and increafed, and brought forth some thirty, and some fixty, and some an hundred.

the

no

he

he

fta

tin

CO

ve

ur

fc

tl

fo

th

ta

at

V

I

6 And he faid unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

To And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

to them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but to them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 That

1

t

h

m

ıe

at

m

e,

1-

n-

ou

W

he

re

eſe

in

nat

they may fee, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not underfland; lest at any time they should be converted, and their fins should be forventhem.

13 And he faid unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

14 The fower

foweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is fown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

they likewise which are fown on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

Admonition, or are not desirous to be instructed, and will not take Pains to consider and search out the Truth.

12. \* In whom accordingly is ex- \* 'Iva, actly fulfilled that Prophecy of Isai-insature, ah, (Isai. 6. 9.) This People heareth in-not distracted, but understandeth not; and feeth tixon indeed, but perceiveth not; so as to be converted and saved.

of the Sower; if you understand not the Meaning of so easie a Similitude as this, how will you understand the Meaning of other harder Parables?

by the Husbandman that went out to fow his Field, was meant Christ or the Preacher of true Religion; and by the Seed, the Word of God.

If. That by the hard beaten Road, where the Seed could not enter the Earth at all; were represented such Persons, as hear the Preaching of the Gospel carelessy, so as not to regard what they hear, nor remember it at all, or at least retain not long the slight Impression it makes upon them.

covered with thin Earth, where the Seed quickly grew up, and for want of Root as quickly withered away; were meant those who readily indeed embrace the Doctrine of Christianity, and are pleased with it, and make Resolutions of obeying it, but for want of Courage and Steddiness of Mind, are overcome by Temptations, and return to their Sins.

Cha

noth

shall

ed:

thin

but con

2

hat

hin

un

he

W

ye

m

an

he

V

h

Earth full of Weeds and Thorns, where the Weeds growing up together with the Corn, over-ran it and choaked it; were to be understood such Persons, who likewise readily entertain indeed the Doctrine of true Religion, and pretend to obey it; but the Hurry of Business, and the Deceitfulness of Riches, and Allurements of Pleasure, distract and corrupt their Minds, so as to hinder them from bringing forth the Fruits of Righteousness.

20. Lastly, That by \* the good Ground, where the Seed grew up, and took Root, and brought forth good Corn; were represented honest and good Men, who hear and believe and obey the Gospel, and persevere in that Obedience to the End, bringing forth the Fruits of Righteousness according to their different Dispositions, Abilities, and Stations.

21. ¶ Thus fessus explain'd the Parable at large to his Disciples. And when he had so done, he said: As a Candle ought not to be hid under a Vessel, but to be set in a Candlestick to give Light through the whole House; so ye, whom I have fully instructed

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word,

of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty-fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ And he faid unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be fet on a candlestick?

<sup>\*</sup> Note, That σπαρέντες here, and in Mat. 13, does not fignific fown in the sense that we say Seed is sown, but in the Sense that we say Ground is sown; (Men being here compared, not to the Seed, but to the Ground:) and This is the proper Use of the Greek Word. Wherefore the Words, is σπαρέντες είς την γῆν την καλην, ought not to be rendred, they that are sown upon good Ground, but they that are sown (that is, who receive the Seed,) themselves being good Ground. And so also is σπειρόμενοι to be rendred in the foregoing Verses.

n

d

f

e

1

e c

22 For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he faid unto them, Take heed what you hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.

25 For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

in the Doctrine of true Religion, ought now to take Care not to suppress it, but to become as Lights to the World; converting Men by the Excellency and Strength of your Doctrine, and by the conspicuous Example of your good Lives, to the Belief and Practice of this true Religion.

22. For the Things which I now tell you privately, ought to manifest themselves publickly by their Effects in your Life and Doctrine; and though it be necessary at present to conceal some Things from the Multitude, because their Prejudices make them uncapable to receive them now, yet the Time is coming when all these Things must be published openly and plainly to all the World.

23. Wherefore observe what I say, and lay it up in your Memories, and consider it, and act accordingly.

24. Jesus added moreover, and faid: 'Tis a thing of the highest Importance, and therefore I repeat it again and inculcate it upon you. Take heed that the Things I teach you, fail not to have their due Effect upon your Minds and Lives, so as my Instructions may not prove in vain. For in Proportion as ye improve and make good Use of your present Advantages and Instructions, so will God afford you greater Grace and Assistances.

25. For every one that with Honesty and Sincerity receives Instruction, and improves the Advantages that God has already given him, to the Promotion of true Religion and the Increase of Virtue; shall have more Instruction, and greater Helps,

C 4 conti-

Ci

like

of wl

fha

of

W

fo lef

th

fo

er

f b

fo

continually afforded him: But he that neglects to improve the Advantages he already has, and continues impenitent, shall be thought unworthy of greater Affiftance, or shall for his Incorrigibleness be even deprived of what he at first had.

26. I But to proceed in the Hiftory. After the Parable of the Sower, Jesus continued to utter many other Comparisons to the People. And he faid; The State of the Gofpel may yet further be compared to a Husbandman's sowing Seed in his Ground.

27 & 28. For as the Seed, after it is once sown, without any further Knowledge or Care of the Husbandman, grows up and increases Day and Night by secret and imperceptible Degrees, till it comes to its just Bigness and Maturity: So Christ, after he has once taught the Doctrine of true Religion, and preach'd it to the World, appears no more himself visibly to affift and promote it, but fuffers it to spread and increase by Means secret and undiscerned, till at length it obtains and produces its full Effect.

29. But at Harvest when the Corn is grown ripe, then the Husbandman comes again, and puts in his Sickle and reaps it: So at the End of the World Christ will again visibly appear, to take to himself and reward those, who have received his Doctrine and brought forth

the Fruits of it.

30 ¶ Again; How, said he, shall I describe the State of the Gospel?

26 And he faid, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should fleep, and rife night and day, and the feed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her felf, first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the fickle, because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ And he faid, Whereunto shall we liken liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? of mufa-

which when it is fown, in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth.

id,

of

an

to

uld

ht

he

ng

he

٧.

rth

uit

he

ar,

ull

he

ght ely

he

he

id,

we

en

32 But when it is fown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, fo that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 And with many fuch parables fpake he the word unto them as they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parablespake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his difciples.

And by what Comparison shall I re-

St. MARK.

present it to you?

31. It may fitly be compared to a Grain of Mustard-seed. For as a Grain of Mustard-seed, when 'tis put into the Earth, is one of the smallest of Seeds: So the Doctrine of Christianity, at its first Appearance, seems very little and inconfiderable.

32. But when this Grain of Mustard-seed grows up, it becomes one of the biggest of Plants, so as to shoot out into a Tree: So the Doctrine of Christianity will in time spread incredibly; and though it be now despised and lightly esteemed by the Fews, yet hereafter it shall be received and entertained by the Gentiles through all the Nations of the World.

33. ¶ Thus Jesus taught the People by way of Similitude or Compari-

fon, † obscurely and by little and † Not, as little discovering the Truth, as they many In-For if terpreters think, in were capable of bearing it. he had declared the whole Truth ex-the most eapresly, and plainly described the Glo-sie and inry and Majesty of his Kingdom, they telligible would all have been offended at it, Manner: and none would have believed him: For that is But by these Parables he now gave inconsistthe fincerest Men amongst them ob-entwith foure Hints of what in due time they Ver. 12. should see clearly brought to pais, and what they should be afterward confirmed in the Belief of, by the Remembrance of these obscure Reprefentations.

34. Thus Fesus, I say, taught the People in Parables; expressing the Similitudes only, without adding their Explication. But when he was alone with his Disciples, he explained every

thing to Them clearly and fully.

35. 7 Now

Cha

ed exc

faid o

What

man

ven t

fea ol

Jesu

unt

of 1

COU

dar

2

cor

im

me

to

an

dv

to

CO

no

h

c

b

35. ¶ Now when the \* Evening was come, Jesus spoke to his Disciples to row over the Lake.

36. Accordingly, as foon as the People was diffuiffed, they carried him cross the Lake in the same Boat

out of which he had been preaching to the People: And fome other Boats

also accompanied him.

37. And in their Passage there came upon them a violent Storm, which made the Lake so very rough, that the Waves beat into the Boat, and it

was in great Danger of finking.

38. In the mean time fesus lay affleep at the End of the Boat, and his Disciples ran to him in a great Fright, and awaked him, saying: Lord, we are just ready to be drowned; and can you sleep without taking notice of the Storm, or being at all concerned for our Preservation?

39. Then Jesus rose up, and with Authority commanded the Wind to fall, and the Water to be still; and the Words were no sooner out of his Mouth, but the Weather became presently calm, and the Lake grew smooth

and quiet.

40. Then turning about to his Disciples, he thus rebuked their Fearfulness and Distrust: How is it, faith be, that after so much Evidence of my Divine Power, and so many Instances as I have given of my tender Con-

35 And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us pass over unto the other side.

36 And when they had fent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he faid unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is it that you have no faith?

<sup>\*</sup> Whether of the same, or of some other day wherein he had likewise been preaching, is not certain from the Words. For co the interesting may here, (as well as in Mat. 13.1.) signifie no more than what St. Luke in the parallel Place expresses by co mix two simpsear, Luc. 8. 22.

e

-

y

e

k

e

c

.

f

1 - /

41 And they feared exceedingly, and faid one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the fea obey him? cern for you, ye can yet doubt either of my Power or Care to preserve you?

41. At this Miracle the Disciples themselves were surprized, and the \*\* Mat. 8. Men of the Boat, and those in the † 27. other Boats were greatly astonished, of this Ch. saying; How great is this Man, and how wonderful is his Power, that even the Winds and the Water thus obey him!

#### CHAP. V.

Jesus dispossesses a Legion of Devils, v. 1. Heals a Bloodyflux, v. 25. Raises Jairus's Daughter, v. 35.

A ND they came over unto the other fide of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no not with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked as funder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

1. When Fesus had thus crossed over the Lake, he landed in the Country of the Gadarenes.

2. And as foon as he was come out of the Boat, there met him \* a Man \* One of possessed with an evil Spirit; whose the two Malice in tormenting the Man, the mention'd Providence of God directed and over-Mat. 8.28. ruled to be at this time an Occasion of evidencing Josus's Power.

3. The Condition of this Man had been most miserable: For the evil Spirit made him run wild in desert Places, and among the Sepulchres of the Dead; and he raged with such Fury and Strength, as that no Art or Force could tame him.

4. For Men had often attempted to bind him with Chains and Fetters; but he brake the Iron with ease, and tore in pieces the Chains like Thread, so that nothing was able to hold him.

5. And

Ch

fayi

the

ma

Jesi

leav

clea

out

the

her

do

int

WE

the

ch

fee

an

cit

CC

W

it

to

h

fe

21

fi

a

Ì

V

1

1

5. And he ran up and down Night and Day upon the Mountains and among the Tombs, crying horribly, and beating and wounding himself with Stones.

6. This Man, I say, spying Jesus afar off at his coming out of the Boat, ran to him and kneeled down and worshipped him; the evil Spirit being compelled by the Divine Power, to acknowledge the Majesty and Autho-

rity of Fesus.

7. And the evil Spirit cried out a-loud, faying; Wherefore, O thou Son of the Supreme God, art thou come to torment us before the Time appointed by God for our final Judgment? I befeech thee, for God's fake, compel us not to return to our Prifon.

8. (For Jefus had commanded him

to come out of the Man.)

9. Then Jesus, to show how great and from how many Enemies the Man's Deliverance was to be, asked the evil Spirit who he was. The Spirit answered, my Name is Legion; signifying that there was a vast Number of them in the Man at once.

red Jesus, that if he compelled them to come out of the Man, yet they might be permitted to continue somewhere in that Country, and not be forced to return to their Chains of

Darkness.

11. Now it happened that there was at that Instant a great Herd of Swine feeding about the neighbouring Mountains.

12. The Devils therefore earnestly intreated Fesus, that if they might

5 And always night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himfelf with

6 But when he faw Jefus afar off, he ran and worship-

ped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and faid, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he faid unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he an-fwered, faying, My name is Legion: for weare many.

10 And he befought him much, that he would not fend them away out of the countrey.

vas there nigh unto. the mountains, a great herd of fwine feeding.

vils befought him,

faying,

ravs

he

un-

the

and

vith

he

off,

hip-

vith

and

Ito

fus,

the

I

od,

ent

un-

out

un-

ked

thy

an-

My

for

be-

ch,

not

out

ere

ito.

ine

le-

m,

g,

faying, Send us into the fwine, that we may enter into them

13 Andforthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the fwine fled, and told it in the city, and in the countrey. And they went out to fee what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was pos-fessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind, and they were afraid.

16 And they that faw it, told them how it befel to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the fwine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coafts.

no longer possess the Man, yet at least they might be suffered to enter into the Swine.

13. This Request Josus \* easily \* The progranted; and the Devils accordingly bable Reacoming out of the Man, went into sons why the Swine: And the Effect of it was, he did so, that the Swine (which were a Herd of see Note on about Two Thousand in Number) Mat. 8. 32. were presently hurried down a Precipice into the Lake, and were drown-

14. When the Keepers of the Swine faw this, they fled; and reported in the City and Country what Things they had feen, and what had befallen their Swine. And abundance of People came out to fee and be fatisfied of the Truth of it.

15. And they came to the Place where Jesus was, and saw the Man sober and in his right Wits, whom they all knew to have been possessed with a Devil, and to have run about naked and mad: And they were convinced of the Truth of the Miracle, and astonished at the Power of Jesus.

16. For those that had been prefent from the Beginning, and were Eye-witnesses of the whole Matter, told them all the particular Circumstances how the Man was healed and the Swine destroyed.

17. They were therefore fully convinced of the Truth of the Miracle; But being more afraid of the Power of Jesus manifested in the Destruction of the Swine, than pleafed with his Goodness in delivering the Man, they intreated him to depart out of their Country.

18. Fesus

Ch

by na

he fa

at hi

him

My

lieth

deat

con

han

fhe

and

24

wit

peo

and

2

WO

an

tw

fer

ma

and

The

thi

rat

he

an

cl

W

h

2

18. Fesus, according to their Desire, returned into the Boat to cross over the Lake again. And the Man who had been possess'd, seeing his Deliverer departing, and perhaps fearing that he was not secure from a Return of his Calamity, desired to go along with Fesus.

19. But Jesus, to show that he could preserve him as well absent as present, and knowing that it would tend more to the Glory of God to leave him in that Country as a standing Proof of his Power and Authority; would not take him with him, but bad him go home to his Friends and Country-Men, and report what a great and miraculous Mercy God had vouchsafed unto him.

20. And accordingly the Man went home, and reported in all the Cities of *Decapolis* what a great Miracle *Jefus* had wrought for him: And all the People of that Country, well knowing the Man's former Condition, and feeing the Certainty of his present Cure, were convinced of the Power of *Jefus* with Astonishment and Admiration.

21. In the mean time Jesus returned in the Boat over the Lake. And when he was landed on the other side, much People of those who had seen him go over at the first and had waited for his return, with many others continually coming out of the neighbouring Towns, slocked together about him.

22. Among whom was a Person of Note, one Fairus, a Ruler of the Synagogue; who, far from the usual Pride of the Pharisees and principal

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jefus fuffered him not, but faith unto him, go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compaffion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jefus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

21 And when Jefus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the fynagogue, Jairus by

n he

the

had with

ayed

ight

Je-

not,

um,

thy

tell

reat

nath

and

affi-

de-

n to

olis,

s Je-

for

men

Je-

ver

nto uch

un-

was

old,

one

the

rus

by

.

by name, and when he faw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And befought him greatly, faying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her, that the may be healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jefus went with him, and much people followedhim, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an iffue of blood twelve years,

26 And had fuffered many things of many physicians, and had fpent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment.

28 For the faid, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried

Jews, kneeled down before Fesus in the Posture of greatest Humility and Veneration;

And entreated him, faying: Lord, I have heard of your many wonderful Works, and am fully con-

vinced of your Power and Goodness; I have a Daughter in my House now lying at the very Point of Death, I befeech you come and touch her, and

I am confident the will recover.

24. Fesis, pleased with the Man's Faith and Humility, went along with him to his House; and the Multitude, eager to see the Event, press'd after them in great Crouds.

25 & 26. Now as they were going, there was in the Throng a Woman who had been Twelve Years troubled with an incurable bloody Flux, and had used all the Remedies which Physicians could prescribe, with great Charge, and without any Succefs.

This Woman, hearing 27. of the Fame of Jesus, had thrust her felf into the Croud which followed him; hoping to find relief, as others in like desperate Cases had done, from his miraculous Power. But being afraid and ashamed to confess her Difease publickly, she came behind him privately, and touched Cloaths:

28. Thinking within her felf, that furely he who had done fo many and great Miracles with only a Word speaking, could not but heal her Difease even with the least Touch of his

Cloaths. 29. And her Expectation did not deceive her. For as foon as the touch-

ed him, the found evidently such a Change

& 25.

C

th

the

he

W

un

fy

ed

hi Ja

br

et

th

na

th

th

ed

W

fai

W

ad

da

bu

ed

bu

pu

ta

ar

th

th

h

W

W

ti

h

to

'n

ir

(] ri

Change within her felf, and fuch a fudden Restoration of Strength and Vigour of Body, as fatisfied her that her Disease was entirely cured.

30. Thus the Woman thought the had fecretly gained a Cure, without being taken Notice of. But Jesus knowing by his Divine Power what was done, and that it would be more for the Glory of God, and the Commendation of the Woman's Faith, to discover the Matter than to conceal it; turned himself about to his Disciples, and asked who touched his Cloaths.

The Disciples wondring what he meant, to ask who touched him when the People pressed and crouded him on every fide, were furprized and knew not what to answer.

32. But Fefus continued looking about him, as it were to discover who had touch'd him, and as if he expected that some Body should confess what had been done.

33. Whereupon the Woman, conscious what she had done, and perceiving that she should be discover'd, came in great Fear and kneeled down before Fesus, and openly confess'd the whole Truth of the Matter.

34. Then Fesus spake comfortably to her, faying; Be not afraid; your great Faith has purchased you this Cure; Go home in Peace, and your Difease shall return upon you no more.

While Jesus was thus talking \* Ver. 24 with the Woman in the \* Way, there came Messengers from the House whither Jesus was going, to tell Jairus that his Daughter was dead, and that therefore he need not now up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus im. mediately knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and faid, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples faid unto him, Thou feeft the multhronging titude thee, and fayeft thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to fee her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down beforehim, and told him all the truth.

34 And he faid untoher, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of thefynagogues house, certain which faid, Thydaughterisdead, Why troublest thou

in

fhe

hat

m-

ing

rer-

of:

1 a-

ess,

ch-

ifci-

im,

nul

ing

10u,

ked

fee

one

man

mb-

vhat

her,

own

told

faid

nter,

nade

o in

hole

yet

ame

r of

ouse,

faid,

lead,

thou

the

rife.

.

e?

the Master any fur-

36 Affoon as Jefus heard the word that was spoken, he faith unto the ruler of the fynagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he fuffered no man to follow him, fave Peter, and James, and Johnthe brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the fynagogue, and feeth the tumult, and them that wept and wail-

edgreatly.

39 And when he was come in, he faith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damfel is not dead, but fleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to fcorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damfel was lying.

41 And he took the damfel by the hand, and faith unto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damfel (I fay unto thee) aSt. MARK.

give Jesus the Trouble of going down to the House.

Fesus, hearing this Account, and feeing the young Woman's Father begin to despair, bad him not be terrified at this News, but believe heartily that God was even yet able to restore his Daughter, and he should quickly fee the Reward of his Faith.

37. Then putting back all the Multitude, and even his Disciples themselves, excepting only Peter, fames and John; he went attended by these Three into the House with Fairus.

38. Where, as foon as he entered, he found a great Rout of Relations and Mourners, weeping and making Lamentation for the untimely Death

of the young Woman.

39. But Fesus, knowing that this her Death was permitted only that he might have Occasion of shewing forth the Power of God, bad them forbear their excessive and unreasonable Mourning: For the young Wofaith he, is not dead, but aman, fleep.

40. At this they all laughed, and derided him; being well affured that the was really dead. But Fesus, having ordered them to be all put out, went into the Room where the young Woman lay, with only her Father and Mother and the Three fore-mentioned Disciples.

41. And he took hold of her Hand; and with a Voice of Power and Authority, bad her rife up.

D

42. Upon

th

th

W

W

m

W

ha

ca

M

Ta

of

an

te A fe

un

ph

ho

OV

m

in

th

W

lai

af

he

42. Upon this she immediately not only returned to Life, but recovering also her Health and Strength, rose up and walked; for the was about twelve Years old. And her Parents were amazed to the last Degree, at the Greatness and Strangeness of the Miracle.

43. Then Fesus ordered that somewhat should be given her to eat; and bad her Parents not report abroad what he had done.

42 And ftraightway the damfel arole, and walked, for the was of the age of twelve years; and they were aftonished with great aftonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no manshould know it: and commanded that fomething should be given her to eat.

#### CHAP. VI.

Jesus despised by his Country-men for the Meanness of his Pa-And therefore worked but few Miracles rentage, V. I. among them, v. 5. He sends forth his Twelve Apostles to preach, v. 7. The Opinion of Herod and others concerning Jesus, v. 14. The Cause and Manner of John Baptist's Death, V. 17. The Apostles give an Account of the Success of their Preaching, v. 30. Jesus feeds Five Thousand with Five Loaves and Two Fishes, v. 35. Walketh on the Water, V. 45. and bealeth many Sick, V. 55.

A Fter these Things Jesus return-ed to Nazareth, the Place of his Education, to converse a while amongst his Friends and Relations; and his Disciples went with him.

2. And there on the Sabbath-day he went, as usual, into their Place of publick Worship, and expounded to them the Writings of the Prophets, and taught them plainly the Doctrine of true Religion. And they that heard him, were greatly amazed at the Wifdom and Excellency of his Instructiat the Gravity and Authority

ND he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his disciples followed him.

2 And when the fabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the fynagogue: and many hearing him, were aftonished, faying, From whence hath this

t-

a-

d,

ge

nd

ed

h-

g-

nat

W

nd-

ng

ner

Pa-

cles

s to

m-

It's

cefs

vith

the

rent

om

ame

oun-

ilci-

n.

the

was

n to

yna-

iany

vere ing,

nath

this

thefe this man things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the fon of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his fifters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus faid unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his kin, and in his own house.

5 And he could there do no mighty works, fave that he laid his hands upon a few fick folk, and healed them.

with which he deliver'd them, and at the Power by which he worked fuch Miracles to confirm the Truth of what

he taught.

But, notwithstanding all this, the Meanness of his Family and Education prejudiced them against him; So that they faid amongst themselves; He preaches indeed admirably, and he does wonderful Things; but we all know that his Father was a poor Tradesman, and his Mother and Kinsmen all mean Persons, and some of his nearest Relations live even yet in the Town with us; He cannot therefore be fuch an extraordinary Person, as he feems to be. And they were asham'd to follow him.

4. Then fefus faid; A Prophet or Preacher of true Religion, where likely to be so little esteemed, as in his own Country, among his own Kinfmen and Acquaintance, who know his Birth and Original, and are apt to judge of him, not by his real Excellencies and true Worth, but by outward and worldly Confiderations; by the Quality of his Family, and by the Circumstances of his Relations.

5. And for this Reason Jesus in his infinite Wisdom did not think fit to do fo many Miracles at Nazareth, as he had done in other Places; For the Unbelief of the Peoole who knew him there, was fuch, that his working more Miracles, which they would certainly have rejected, would only have rendred them more unexcusable, and exposed himself to greater Envy and Hatred. He therefore only healed a few fick People, that had Faith to be healed; and so departed.

D 2

on Mat.

10. 10.

C

un

a t

th

un

be

So

ral

ju th

th

pe

ou

an

m

an

ro

(fo

ip

he

th

fre

th

W

th

T

6. And he wondred greatly at the Perverseness of their Judgment, in rejecting him upon fuch an unreafonable Prejudice as the Meanness of his Parentage. However, when he went away, he preached in all the little Towns thereabouts, as he went through.

7. ¶ About this time, Jesus took afide his Twelve Apostles, and having given them Instructions what they should preach, and a Power of working even the greatest Miracles to confirm their Doctrine; he fent them out by two and two, to preach in the Ci-

8 & 9. And in their Instructions

he commanded them, not to make

ties of Judæa.

any Provision for their Journey, either of Bread, Money, or Cloaths; but to go just as they were; each Man \* See Note with only the fame \* Staff, Shoes, and Cloaths, which he then had; and to depend upon the Providence of God, in whose Service they were employed, to raife them up Friends, and to provide for their Sustenance and Defence in the Way.

> 10. He added moreover, and faid: When you first enter a Town or City, go into any Family that is willing to entertain you, and well-disposed to hear your Doctrine; and when you are once received into a House, continue in the fame, and fettle therein a lasting Friendship, without removing from one Lodging to another, till you depart out of that Town.

> 11. And if any Place be so obstinate and wicked, that you can meet with no Entertainment there, nor find any Perfons who will attend to your Preaching and receive your Doct-

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages teaching.

¶ And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to fend them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits.

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, fave a staff only: no fcrip, no bread, no in their money purfe:

9 But be shod with fandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he faid unto them, In what place foever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And who foever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under he out

calthe gan orth wo, owfpi-

andthey hing ney, : no

no their with t put

faid what enoufe,

l ye

that

you,

dust under under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, then for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oyl many that were sick, and healed them.

14 And king Herod heard of him, (for his name was spread abroad) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

That it is Elias.

rine; depart from thence; and as you go away, shake off the very Dust from your Feet, as a Protestation against their Impenitence, and that you will have nothing more to do with them, but leave them to the righteous Judgment of God. Assuredly I tell you, the Destruction that God will bring upon the Inhabitants of that Place in the Day of his Vengeance, shall be more terrible than was the Overthrow of Sodom; because they reject clearer Declarations of the Will of God, and greater Means of Conviction, and Offers of greater and more lasting Happiness.

Apostles went out to preach; And the Sum of what they taught and exhorted every where, was that Men should forsake their Sins and reform their

Lives.

13. And they proved their Divine Commission by undeniable Miracles; by casting out Devils and healing all forts of Diseases.

of Jesus grew every Day greater and greater; so that at last the Report of the mighty Works, done by him and his Disciples, came to the Ears of King Herod: Who, conscious of his having slain John the Baptist, whom he believed to be a Prophet; presently suspected that That good Man, whom he had unjustly beheaded, was by the Power of God restored to Life, and therefore manifested himself in this extraordinary Manner.

15. And indeed, various were Peoples Conjectures concerning Jesus; fome

Cl

2

con

con

on

mad

lord

and

Gal

dau

Hen

and

ple

the

hin

unt

of

tho

wi

un

eve

of

it

hal

do

for

to

fha

fai

Jo

in

ha

an

I

m

c

0

21

v h

2

fome thinking that he was Elias, whom Malachi had foretold should appear; others fancying that he was one of the old Prophets, raised again from the Dead; and others, that he was a new Prophet, in Power and Dignity like to those of old.

16. But Herod, as I faid, whose Conscience terrified him for the unjust Murder of John the Baptist, concluded that it must needs be John risen from the Dead, and appearing

again.

17 & 18. For Herod had imprifoned John, and beheaded him in the Prison. And the Occasion of his acting that Cruelty, was this. Herod having married Herodias, one that had before been his own Brother's Wife; was told by John, with great Plainness and Freedom, that the Thing was absolutely unlawful.

19. Hereupon Herodias bore a conflant Grudge against John, and perfwaded Herod to lay him in Prison, but could not yet prevail upon him to put

him to Death.

20. For Herod, though he could willingly enough have put John to Death, yet he was afraid to do it, because of the great Esteem and Authority which John's extraordinary Holiness had gained among the Peo-And besides, the Experience which he himself had of John's being a just and good Man, had forced him to have some kind of Respect and Veneration for him; fo that he would often, when he was in a good Humour, take Delight to hear him Discourse; and would frequently yield to do many things according to his Advice and Direction.

And others faid, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard thereof, he faid, It is John whom I beheaded, he is rifen from the dead.

17 For Herod himfelf had fent forth, and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wise; for he had married her.

18 For John had faid unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brothers wife.

rodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

ar And

T.

d,

et,

Q-

Ic-

of,

hn

ed,

he

m-

h,

no

ind

for

his

ife;

ied

nad

It

ice

ers

Ie-

ar-

nd

led

uld

ar-

ng uft

ly,

n,

ard

ny

urd

nd

convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth-day madea fupper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee.

22 And when the daughter of the faid Herodias came in, and danced and pleased Herod, and them that fat with him, the king faid unto the damsel, Ask of me what soever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he fware unto her, Whatfoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my king-

dom.

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? and she said, The head of

John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, faying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist,

26 And the king was exceeding forry, yet for his oaths fake, and for their fakes which fat with him, he would not reject her.

found the following Opportunity to prevail upon the King to put John to Death. Herod having made a great Feast upon his Birth-Day, at which all his Nobles, and the Officers of his Army, and the principal Men in his Kingdom were present; the Daughter of the said Herodias came and danced before them, and pleased the King and all his Guests so extreamly, that he promised to grant her whatever she would desire.

23. And to give her the more Affurance to ask what she would, he confirmed his Promise with a rash Oath, that he would certainly grant her whatever she desired, though it should cost him half his Dominions.

24 & 25. Upon this, the young Woman went out to advise with her Mother, what she should ask of the King; and returning again in great haste, she desired that he would present her with the Head of John the Baptist immediately.

26. At this Request the King was furprized, and very forry: Yet having fworn so publickly and solemnly in the Presence of all his Nobles to grant her Request, he was ashamed to confess his Rashness, and to go back from his so-

lemn Oath and Promife.

D 4 27 & 28.

\* Ver. 7.

27 & 28. He fent therefore prefently a Soldier of his Guard to the Prison, who beheaded John, and brought his Head in a Dish; and the King presented it to the young Woman, and the young Woman carried it to her Mother Herodias. And thus that cruel Woman accomplished her Design against the holy Man, in revenge for his opposing her unlawful Marriage.

29. But when the Disciples of John heard of this his Death, they came and gat leave to fetch his Body out of the

Prison, and bury it.

30. ¶ To return now to the History. The Apostles, having finished the Work upon which Jesus had \* sent them out, came back again to Jesus; and when they were all met, they gave him each one a particular Account what they had done in their Journey, and of the great Success of their Preaching and Miracles.

31. After which, because the People began to gather to them again so fast, as hardly to allow them Time so much as to eat their Meat; Jesus spake to them to retire alone with him into some private Place, where they might rest for some time and re-

fresh themselves.

32. Accordingly they took Boat as privately as they could, and went and landed in a defart Place over-against

Beth faida.

33. But the People, who faw them departing, and watched which way they directed their Course, went about by Land to meet Jesus at his coming ashore; and many others also out of the neighbouring Towns on

27 And immediately the king fent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prifon,

29 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damfel: and the damfel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

30 And the apostles gathered together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they

had taught.

31 And he faid unto them, Come ye your felves apart into a defert place, and reft a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leifure fo much as to cat.

32 And they departed into a defert place by fhip pri-

vately.

33 And the people faw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 And

I.

di-

nt

nd

ead

nd

ad-

ori-

ght

ar-

the

to

his

f it,

ook

and

pof-

ogeand

ngs,

had

they

faid

ne ye

tin-

lace,

nile:

nany

oing,

lei-

as to

v de-

lesert

pri-

peo-

1 de-

many

d ran

ut of

out-

and

unto

. And

34 And Jefus, when he came out, faw much people, and was moved with compassion towards them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the day was now far fpent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a defert place, and now the time is far passed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 He answered and faid unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, shallwe go and buy two hundred peny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He faith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and fee. And when they knew, they fay, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all fit down by companies upon the green grafs.

that fide the Lake, having discovered where he was, came and met them.

34. When therefore Jesus came out of the Boat, he found a great Multitude of People waiting for him; and he pitied them, because they seemed willing to receive Instruction, but wanted honest and sincere Teachers; and he taught them many Things concerning the Kingdom of God, and the Nature of true Religion.

35. Now when he had fpent much Time in instructing the People, and healing their Sick; his Disciples began to put him in mind, that the Night drew on, and that the Place

where they were, was defart.

36. And they faid; There is nothing here for the People to eat; It is time to difmiss them, before it be dark; that they may go into the neighbouring Towns, and provide for themselves.

37. Jesus said; Nay, but do you give them some Refreshment here. The Disciples answered; How can we make Provision for such a vast Number of People? All the Money we have, is not sufficient to buy Bread enough, to give every one of them a little.

38. Fesus said; Go see what you have here ready. They went, and brought him word, that they had only Five Loaves of Bread, and Two little Fishes amongst them all.

39. Then Jesus bad his Disciples order the People to divide themselves into Companies, and to set down on the graffy Places on the Ground.

40. Ac-

th

W

th

fo

ni

01

W

fa

fa

ti

u

40. Accordingly they fat down upon the Grafs in feveral † Companies, by Fifties and Hundreds in a Com-

41. And when they were ready, Jefus took the Five Loaves and the Two Fishes; and having given Thanks, according to his constant Custom, he brake the Bread, and delivered it with the Fishes to his Disciples to be distributed among the People.

42. And the Disciples, according to his Directions, distributed them among the People; and every one of the Company had as much as he could eat, and to spare.

43. So that when they had all done, the Disciples took up as many broken Pieces of Bread and Scraps of Fish, as would fill Twelve Baskets.

44. Yet the Number of People, who had been thus fed, was not less than Five Thousand Men, besides Women and Children.

done, Jesus bad his Disciples take Boat, and cross over the Lake towards Bethsaida, leaving him behind alone, to dismiss the People.

46. And when he had difmiffed the People, he retired by himself to the top of a Hill, to pray secretly, according to his Custom.

47. During which time his Disciples were gotten into the Midst of the Lake, where Night and contrary Winds came upon themat once.

40 And they fat down in ranks by hundreds and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fiftes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sentaway the people.

46 And when he had fent them away, he departed to a mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the ship was in the mids of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And

<sup>+</sup> Συμπόσια & πρωσιαι here; and κλισίαι, Luc. 9, 14; do not fignifie Ranks, but Companies fitting round on the Ground, as about Tables.

t

0

p C-

e

e

i-

e

0

1-

id

d.

k

ts

S,

at es

re

t-

ed

et

nd

er

to

he

le.

he

y,

e-

he

he

23,

he

nd

ot

25

48 And he faw them toiling in rowing: (for the wind was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the fea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they faw himwalking upon the fea, they fupposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

for they all faw him, and were troubled) And immediately he talked with them, and faith unto them, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not a fraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the wind ceased: and they were fore amazed in them selves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they confidered not the miraele of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

48. Then Jefus coming down to the Shore, faw them in great Distress, tossed with the Waves, and labouring to row against the Wind. And having suffered them, for a Trial of their Faith and Patience, to continue in that Danger a great Part of the Night; he went to them towards Morning, walking upon the Water, and made as if he would have gone past them.

efpied him, (for though there was not Light enough to differ who he was, yet they all plainly faw one walking upon the Water;) they were frighted, thinking they had feen an Apparition; and shrieked out. But he presently came up to them, and spake comfortably to them, telling them who he was, and bad them not be frighted; and when they knew his Voice, they were satisfied.

51. And he went into the Boat to them; and the Storm immediately ceased. At which they were no less furprized with *Wonder* and *Admiration*, than they were before with *Fear* at his appearing upon the Water.

52. For though they had feen him work so many Miracles already, and were even then but just come from seeing Five Thousand Men fed with Five Loaves of Bread, which was a more wonderful Miracle than either walking upon the Water or appeasing the Storm; yet so dull and slow were they of Understanding, that they had not yet framed any just Apprehension of his Divine Power and Goodness.

53. Now when they were come to the other fide of the Lake, they landed in the Country of Gennefareth.

54. And

# A Paraphrase on

54. And as foon as they came out of the Boat, the People of those Parts prefently discovered who Jesus was.

55. And they brought to him from all that fide of the Country, fick Perfons lying upon Beds, carrying them after him whitherfoever he went.

Village or Country-Town he at any time entred, prefently they laid fick People at his Feet in the Streets, befeeching him that he would but fuffer them so much as to touch his Cloaths; and all that touched him, were perfectly healed.

# Chap. VII.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, wherethey heard he

foever heentred into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the fick in the streets, and befought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him, were made whole.

### CHAP. VII.

Jesus reproveth the Pharisees Hypocrisie, and explaineth at large the true Notion of Cleanness and Uncleanness, v. 1. Casteth out an evil Spirit at the Importunate Request of a Syrophænician Woman, v. 24. Healeth a deaf and dumb Man, v. 32.

1. While Jesus continued in this Country of Gennesaret, some of the Pharisees and other Jewish Doctors, who had travelled thither from Jerusalem, came to Jesus to observe his Doctrine and Actions, and to watch for Matter of Accusation against him.

THen came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

2 And

I.

ley

of

ay

ro'

ion

ind

aofe

k,

he

er-

nto

or

laid

ets,

ght

but

his

ma-

im,

e.

at

I.

fa

umb

to-

into

ees,

the

ame

And

2 And when they faw fome of his difciples eat bread with defiled (that is to fay, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

3 For the Pharifees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and pots, brazen veffels, and of tables.

5 Then the Pharifees and fcribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

### St. MARK.

2. And it was not long before they found an Opportunity of expressing their Malice: For, observing Fesus's Disciples to sit down to Meat sometimes, without having washed their Hands immediately before; (for which Omission the superstitious Pharisees accounted them polluted and unholy;) they presently began to accuse them, as prophane, irreligious, and ill-instructed Persons.

3. (For the Pharifees, and other Jews also, held it strictly as a Law delivered down to them by Tradition from their Predecessors or Rabbies and Heads of Sects, that in many Cases they ought not to eat, without washing their Hands immediately before.

4. For Example; If they had been at any publick Affembly, where they converfed with mix'd Company; as at the Market, or at any Court of Judicature; they would never eat without first washing their Hands. And many other such Things, not commanded in Scripture, but delivered by Tradition from their Rabbies, they thought themselves obliged to observe, and superstitiously laid even the greatest Stress upon them; such as vain and unnecessary Washing of Pots, and Cups, and brazen Vessels, and Beds on which they sat at Meat, &c.)

5. Upon this Occasion therefore the Pharisees and Jewish Teachers began to accuse Jesus and his Disciples, of Prophaneness; saying to Jesus, Wherefore do you, who pretend to be a Teacher of Righteousness, suffer your Disciples to transgress the Laws which our Elders have esta-

blished

blished, sitting down to Meat without first washing their Hands?

6. Jesus answered: The Character which Isaiah gave of your Fore-sathers, is most exactly true of you; (Esai. 29. 13.) This hypocritical People make great Pretences and outward Shows of Piety and Devotion, of Purity and Holiness; but they are utterly void of that Sincerity and Uprightness of Heart, which only is acceptable to God.

7. Vain therefore and unacceptable in the Sight of God are all their Pretences to Religion; since in their Practice they prefer the superstitious Doctrines of Men, before the eternal Laws and express Commandments of God; Teaching others also, and imposing it upon them, to do the same.

8. Most exactly, I say, does this Character sit you. For thus ye, neglecting the great Commands of God, Justice, Charity, and Truth; lay the great Stress of your Religion, upon such vain Traditions and Impositions of Men, as washing of Hands, and of Pots and Cups, and the like.

9. Nay, and ye not only prefer these Impositions of Men before the Commandments of God, to the great Neglect and Omission of your Duty; but ye even directly transgress, and act plainly in Contradiction to the Commandments of God, when some Tradition happens to be contrary thereto.

10. For Instance: It is an express Command of God by Moses, that every Man should Honour his Father and Mother, Exod. 20. 12. And of such Importance and Necessity is

6 He answered and said unto them, Wellhath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

an

fat

is (

fay

foe

be

he

hin

ou

or.

wo

eff

dit

del

fuc

ye.

he

p30

1210

He

vei

un

thi

a 1

int

hir

wl

hir

tha

the

the

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying afide the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he faid untothem, Fullwellye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

To For Mofes faid, Honour thy father and thymother: and, Whoso curfeth father or mother, let him die the death.

rr But

d

)-

yis

0-

ne

ut

m

in

ie,

A-

d-

ide

ent

he

as

ots

ike

un-

lye

nd-

hat

our

aid, ther and,

fa-

let

But

1.

a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by what-soever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

12 And ye fuffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother.

Making the word of God of none effect thro' your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many fuch like things do ye.

14 ¶ And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and

understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

this Duty, that whoever transgresses it, is positively condemned to die by the Law of God, Exod. 21. 17.

11. Yet ye on the contrary teach, that if a Man gives that Money to the Treasury, to be imployed in the Service of the Temple, with which he ought to have relieved the Necessities of his Parents; that then he sins not, though he suffers his Parents to want.

12. And thus ye hinder Men from relieving the Wants of their Parents; which yet is evidently a principal and especial Part of that *Honour*, which Men are expresly required to pay unto them by the Law of God.

13. By this Invention therefore, and many other fuch vain and unjust Traditions, ye presumptuously disobey the express Commandments of God, under specious and hypocritical

Pretences of Religion.

14. Then Fesus, turning himself from the Scribes and Pharises, called to the common People to draw nigh and hear, saying; Hearken all of you, and learn to understand the

true Differences of things.

15. Cleanness and Uncleanness in the Sight of God, are not outward Accidents of the Body, but inward Dispositions of the Heart and Mind. Whatever therefore is without the Man, or enters only into his Body, without affecting his Mind; as the Things which he touches, or eats or drinks; cannot make him \* unclean before

<sup>\*</sup> That is, no Kind of Meat or Drink makes a Mana Sinner, tho' the Quantity may through Intemperance, which is a Vice of the Mind.

God:

God: But the things which make a Man impure in the Judgment of God, are only those which proceed from within him, from the Heart and Mind; as evil Thoughts, Designs, and Actions.

16. Whosoever is capable and desirous of Instruction, let him observe

what I fay.

17. Then Jesus, leaving the Multitude, retired into a House; and when he was alone, his Disciples defired him to explain to them yet more fully the true Notion of Cleanness and Uncleanness.

18. Jesus wondring at their Dulness in not presently apprehending so plain a Matter: What, saith he; are you, who ought to teach others, so slow in understanding such an easy Thing your selves! Can any thing be more evident, than that what a Man

+ See Note eats or drinks, cannot make him +

on Ver. 15. unclean in the Sight of God?

19. For whatever fo enters into a Man, goes only through his Body; without making his Mind, which is the Seat of Virtue and Vice, either the better or the worse.

20. But the Things that come from within a Man, the Thoughts and Defigns of his Heart and Mind; these only are they, which can truly make

a Man impure and unclean.

21 & 22. For Example; All wicked Contrivances, Adultery, Fornication, Murder, Theft, Covetoufness, Fraud and Oppression, Cheating, Lasciviousness, Envy, Detraction and Calumny, Pride, and

have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he faith unto them, Are ye fo without under-franding alfo? Doye not perceive, that what foever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

h

C

fe

ar

th

fo

0

C.

fo

ta

bı

u

P

20 And he faid, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetoufness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evileye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness.

23 All

II.

man

r, let

n he

the:

peo-

iples

cern-

faith

re ye

nder-

Doye

that

hing t en-

man,

nim,

it en-

his

o the

h out

ight,

its?

faid,

meth

that

with-

artot

d evil

eries,

mur-

cove-

ckedlasciileye,

oride,

3 All

1.

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman whole young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

26 (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and she befought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the childrenfirst be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

all \* foolish and ungoverned Passi-

23. These are the things, which proceeding from wicked and corrupt Minds, make Men really unclean and hateful to God. But if your Minds be pure and free from these Vices, there is no Uncleanness in neglecting the Pharifees fuperstitious Washings.

24. After this, Jesus departing out of the Country of Gennesareth, re-

tired towards the Borders of Tyre and Sidon, and went into a House there, defiring to conceal himself a while from the Throngs and Importunities of the Multitude. But the Fame of his Doctrine and Miracles had fo spread it self even beyond the Bounds of Judaa, that it was not possible for him to keep himself unknown, no not in that very extreme Part of the Country.

25 & 26. For no sooner was he arrived in those Parts, but presently there met him a Syrophenician Woman, one † by Birth and Education + Yet proa Stranger to the Nation and Religi- bably now on of the Jews; who having heard a Proselyte, of his Miracles, followed him, begging calling feand intreating him with great Impor- fus the Son tunity, that he would vouchfafe to of David, cast out an unclean Spirit that Posses Mat. 15. cast out an unclean Spirit that Possesled her Daughter.

27. But Jesus said; Nay: Fews are the peculiar People of God; And as it is not fit for a Man to take away his Childrens Meat, and give it to the Dogs; fo I must first dispense God's Mercies to the Jews, before it

E

<sup>\*</sup> So apporin feems here most properly to fignifie, in Opposition to σωφροσύνη.

will be meet to impart them to you,

who are Strangers and Gentiles.

28. The Woman answered: 'Tis true, Lord; and I acknowledge my own Unworthiness: Yet as the Dogs are always allowed to pick up the Crumbs which fall from the Childrens Table; so I hope you may grant this one small Favour to me, who am a poor Stranger, without diminishing your Bounty to the Fews.

29. At this Answer, Jesus as it were surprized with the Woman's Faith, and vanquished by her modest Importunity, yielded to grant her Request, saying: O Woman, your extraordinary Faith and Patience shall not go unrewarded; your Daughter's

Disease is removed.

30. Whereupon the Woman, believing what was faid, and joyful at her Success, went Home and found her Daughter perfectly well.

31. ¶ Then fesus returning from the Coasts of Tyre and Sidon, came through the Borders of Decapolis to

the Lake of Galilee.

32. And as he was in the Way, the People brought to him a Man that was both Deaf, and had also a very great Impediment in his Speech: and they defired him to lay his Hand upon him, as they had known him do upon several others, and cure him.

33. Jesus, though he could easily have cured him with only a Word speaking, or laying his Hand upon him, as he had often done to others; yet chusing sometimes to represent the invisible Efficacy of his Power by outward Signs, he took the Man a little aside out of the Road, and put his Fingers into his Ears, and with a lit-

28 And she anfwered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crumbs.

up

fig

to

tha

Wa

op

ftr:

Wa

fpa

ed

fho

bu

ch

m

lif

yo

ha

W

bo

21

fp

29 And he faid unto her, For this faying, go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when the was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coafts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the fea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they be seech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And

34 And looking up to heaven, he fighed, and faith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

d And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

C

C

d

in

10

ıd

to

e,

ot

2-

at ad in ey ut ok

he out his t, his

nd

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He
hath done all things
well: he maketh
both the deasto hear,
and the dumb to
speak.

tle Spittle upon his Finger touched his Tongue.

34. Then looking up to Heaven, to shew the Man from whence he ought to acknowledge that all Benefits proceed, he groaned within himfelf, and said to the Man: All the Causes of your Infirmity are removed; Receive your Hearing, and the Power of Speech.

35. Upon which words, the Man's Hearing immediately came to him, and the Impediment in his Speech totally ceased, and he spake from thenceforward plainly and distinctly.

36. Then Jesus commanded those that were present, not to report this Thing publickly abroad: But they published it, notwithstanding his Command to the contrary; and even so much the more, because they saw that he himself was not desirous to receive the Glory of so great Miracle.

37. And they were aftonished more than at all the things they had ever seen or heard before; And they praifed fesus greatly, saying, that he did all things for the Good and Benefit of Mankind, healing their Diteases, and relieving their Infirmities.

E 2 CHAP.

ma

to

gr

too

and

bra his

be

the

be

fe

he

m

alf

an

th

br

et

bo

av

W

to

m

fe

W

fr

fr

in

#### CHAP. VIII.

Jesus feedeth Four Thousand with seven Loaves, v. 1. Resuses to give the Pharisees a Sign from Heaven, v. 11. Advises his Disciples to teware of the Hypocrise of the Pharinises, and reproves them for not understanding an easie Figure of Speech, v. 14. Restores to a blind Man his Sight, v. 22. Asks his Disciples their own and other Mens Opinion concerning him, and foretells to them his Sufferings, v. 27. Exhorts to Perseverance and Patience under Afflictions and Persecutions, v. 34.

1. A Bout this Time a very great Multitude being gathered together after Joss, intent upon hearing his Doctrine, and desirous to have all their Sick cured, so that they continued long with him in a Place where they could have nothing to eat; Jesus called to him his Disciples, and said:

2. I pity these poor People, who have followed me now these Three Days together in the Desarts, where there is no manner of Sustenance or Provision for them.

3. And if I should dismiss them, without giving them any Refreshment to support them by the Way; many of them, who are come from a great Distance, would certainly faint before they could get home.

4. The Disciples, not considering Jesus's former Miracles, said; How is it possible for us to provide Victuals in a desart Place for such a vast Number of People as this?

5. However, Jesus bad them go fee how much Bread they had with them; and they brought him word

1 N those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and faith unto them,

2 I have compaffion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat.

3 And if I fend them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them come from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they faid, Seven. 6 And he commanded the people to fit down on the ground: and he took the feven loaves and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did fet them before the people.

7

7.

d

15

d

0

is

n,

n,

tiey th

nd

at.

nd

ng

es,

by

ers

m

ci-

n,

na

efe

ere

ced

ny ye?

Se-

An

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, feven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand; and he sent them away.

no ¶And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharifees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking from him a sign from heaven, tempting him. that they had only Seven Loaves, which they thought could do nothing towards satisfying such a Multitude.

6. But Jesus wondring that they should yet be so dull and slow of Belief, bad them order the People to sit down upon the Ground. Then taking the Bread in his Hands, he gave Thanks, and brake it, and delivered it to his Disciples, and bad them distribute it to all the People.

7. They had also a few small Fishes, which fesus took in like manner, and having given Thanks, he bad his Disciples divide them also, and give every one of the Company a piece.

8. And thus all the People did eat, and had not only enough to fatisfie them, but, when they had done, the Disciples gathered up moreover Seven Baskets full of Scraps.

9. Yet the Number of those who were thus fed, was not less than Four Thousand Men. Then Jesus dismissed them and sent them home.

was gone, Jesus went by Boat with his Disciples over the Lake, and landed on the Coast of Dalmanutha or Magdala.

11. Where presently some of the Pharises came about him, and began to dispute with him about his Miracles; contending, since they could not deny the Matter of Fact, that his Miracles, being all wrought upon Things here below, were not sufficient Evidence of a Divine and Heavenly Power: Wherefore, if he would convince Them, and not be thought to impose upon the Credulity of the meaner sort of People, they desired he would call for some visible and E 3 undeniable

Ch

fus !

unt

reaf

hav

neit

hav

yet

fee

vin

not

ren

the

mo

hor

ful

too

fay

Tv

fev

tho

fra

up

Se

un

it t

de

m

an

bl

an

to

th

h

1

undeniable Sign immediately from Heaven. And this they did, not that they defired to be informed in the Truth, and convinced of his Divine Power; but only in Hopes to find fome Occasion of accusing and reviling him.

12. Jesus therefore knowing their incurable Hypocrisie and Malice, sighed and said: What a perverse Generation of Men is this, that after so many Miracles as I have worked among them, they will yet believe nothing unless they may see a Sign from Heaven of their own chusing! No, there shall no Sign be granted them, to satisfie their unreasonable and perverse Curiosity.

away from the *Pharifees*, he went back to the Boat, and returned o-

ver the Lake again.

14. ¶. Now as they were going, the Disciples found that they had forgotten to furnish themselves with Bread; having no more than one Loaf with them in the Boat.

15. About which, while they were folicitous; Jesus began to admonish them to beware of the Leaven of the Pharisees and of Herod, meaning their false and wicked Doctrine, which was as apt to corrupt Mens Minds and Manners, as Leaven to make Bread sowre.

16. But the Disciples, whose Minds were taken up about their Want of Bread, hearing him mention Leaven, fancied presently that he said this to reprove their Negligence in forgetting to bring Bread.

12 And he fighed deeply in his spirit, and faith, Why doth this generation seek after a fign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loaf.

of theleaven of the Pharifees, and of theleaven of Herod,

16 And they reafoned among themfelves, faying, It is because we have no bread.

17 And

17 And when Jefus knew it, he faith
unto them, Why
reason ye, because ye
have no bread? perceive ye not yet,
neither understand?
have ye your heart
yet hardned?

18 Having eyes, fee ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not

remember?

19 When I brake
the five loaves among five thousand,
how many baskets
full of fragments
took ye up? They

unto

him.

Twelve.

red

rit,

oth

ek

ily

ou,

ign

ge-

eft

ing

in,

0-

the

ot-

ad,

in

em

ıf.

rg-

ıg,

are

the of

od,

ea-

m-

is

no

nd

20 And when the feven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.

21 And he faid unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethfaida, and they bring a blind man unto him, and befought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him perceived, wondring that they should fo grossy misunderstand his Words, he expostulated with them, saying: Why are your Minds so full of solicitous Thoughts upon your having forgotten to bring Bread with you? Will you never be taught by the great and repeated Miracles which I have worked before your Eyes, to understand my Power, and to rely upon me? or do you never regard or remember what you see?

19. Did I not lately with only Five Loaves feed Five Thousand Men? and they had enough and to spare, so that when they had all done, ye took up twelve Baskets full of Fragments?

They faid, Yes.

20. Again, Did I not at another time with only Seven Loaves feed Four Thousand Men, and ye took up moreover Seven Baskets full of Fragments? They said, We remem-

ber it well.

21. Why then, faid Jesus, are ye so dull and inconsiderate, to be still disturbed at the want of a little Bread, as if I were not able to supply you upon a Necessity? and why do you fancy, that I speak about Bread, when I warned you against the Leaven of the Pharisees evil Doctrine?

22. ¶. When Jesus had said this, they came ashore at Bethsaida; and the People brought to him a blind Man, desiring that he would lay his Hands upon him, and restore him his Sight.

any beneficial Miracle, took the blind E 4 Man,

er.

1

an

ur

th

ed

fh

ſ

t

Man, and led him to a private Place out of the Town; where laying his Hands upon him, and having touched his Eyes with a little Spittle upon his Finger, he asked him whether he yet faw any thing.

24. The blind Man looking up, and beginning to recover his Sight in some Measure, said; I discern Men, but very imperfectly, so that I can hardly

distinguish them from Trees.

25. Then I fus, putting his Hands again upon his Eyes, bad him look up the second time; and then he found his Sight perfectly restored, so that he could fee every thing plainly and distinctly.

26. Which being done, Matt. 11. knowing the \* Impenitence and Unworthiness of the People of Bethsaida, bad the Man go home privately to his own House, and not return to Bethfaida, nor tell any that belonged to that Town, what God had done for him.

> 27. J. After this, Jesus travelled with his Disciples through the Towns of Casarea Philippi. And as they were upon the Road, Fesus asked his Disciples, what Opinion People had of him, and Whom Men thought him to be.

> 28. The Disciples said; Some think you to be John the Baptist risen from the Dead; others think you to be Elias, the Fore-runner of the Meffiah; and others, that you are one of the old Prophets appearing again, or one like to them in Dignity and Power.

> 29. Jesus said: Well, and what do you your felves think, who have all along been with me, and heard

out of the town and when he had ipit on his eyes, and put his hand upon him, he asked him if he faw ought.

24 And he looked up, and faid, I fee men as trees, walking.

25 After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and faw every man clearly.

26 And he fent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his difciples, faying unto them, Whom do men fay that I am?

28 And they aniwered, John the Baptist: but some lay, Elias; and others, One of the

prophets.

29 And he faith But unto them, whom fay ye that I am ad

nd

on

m

ed

*lee* 

k-

he

ain

nd

ip:

ed,

nan

ent

his

lei-

the

to

fus his

the

rea

the

dif-

nto

do

n?

an-

the

me

0-

the

ith

But

hat

m ?

.

I am? And Peter answereth and faith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must fuffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and the priefts and chief scribes, and be killed, and after three days rife again.

32 And he spake that faying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke

him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, faying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou fa-

my Doctrine, and feen all my Works? Whom do you think me to be? Peter answered; We believe you to be the Christ, the long-expected Melliah.

30. Then Jesus commanded them, † not to publish it abroad yet, in plain and express Terms, that he was indeed the Messiah; but to keep this Secret to themselves till after his Re-

Surrection.

31. For, faith he, though I am, as you fay truly, the Meffiah; yet before I shall gloriously manifest my self to be fo, I must suffer many things from my Enemies, and must die by the Hands of unjust and cruel Men, and rife again the Third Day from the Dead.

32. And this Thing Jesus told them now \* plainly and expresly; judging it a fit Occasion to acquaint them with his approaching Humiliation and Sufferings, when they had just declared their Belief of his Greatness and Power, and were full of too great Expectations that he would fuddenly make some glorious Manifestation of it. When therefore Peter heard him talk of Suffering and Dying, he was much furprized, and began to fay; Far be it from thee.

33. But *fefus* turning himself a-

bout with an angry Countenance, in the Presence of his Disciples, said to Peter; Nay, now you are become my Enemy, talking like a weak Man

that

+ The probable Reasons of this Charge, see at large in my Paraphrase on Mat. 16. 20.

<sup>\*</sup> Not, in the Hearing of the People, as Dr. Hammond, by a strange Mistake, interprets it, contrary to the express Words of the Evangelists; but wappnoin, plainly and without Riddle, to the Disciples.

that looks only at Worldly Prosperity, and not knowing the wife De-

figns and Methods of God.

34. ¶. Then calling to him the People, that they might hear also as well as the Disciples, he said to them all: Whosoever will undertake to be my Disciple, must be willing to part with all the Pleasures of Prosperity, and to follow me in a poor and afflicted State; and must resolve to suffer all things, even Death it self, for the sake of true Religion and Vertue.

35. For if any Man, in Hopes to fave his Life in this present Time, forsakes his Religion or his Vertue; he shall most truly lose it, by incurring eternal Death: But he that loses his Life in the present Time, for the Sake of Vertue and true Religion, shall most properly save it, by at-

taining eternal Happiness.

36 & 37. Let no Man therefore think it an intolerable or a hard Condition, if he be forced to part with all his worldly Enjoyments, and even Life it felf for my fake. For what Comparison is there, between all the unsatisfactory and short Enjoyments that this present World can afford, and the saving or losing a Man's own Soul eternally?

38. Wherefore whoever thro' the Fear of Shame and Reproach, or upon any other Temporal Motive whatfoever, shall forsake the Profession of my true Religion, or fall away from the Practise of its Precepts; such a one will I be ashamed to own for my Disciple, when I shall appear in the Glory of God, attended with an innumerable Company of Angels, to

vourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he faith unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and sollow me.

35For whofoever will fave his life, shall lose it; but whofoever shalllose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own foul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 Whofoever therefore shall be assumed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be assumed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

judge the World, and render to every Man according to his Works.

#### CHAP. IX.

Jesus's Transfiguration, v. 1. He shows that John the Baptist was the Elias prophesied of by Malachi, v. 12. Casts out a Devil, and reproves his Disciples for not being able to do it for want of Faith, v. 14. He acquaints his Disciples with his approaching Sufferings, v. 30. And upon Occasion of their disputing about Pre-eminence, exhorts them to Humility and Charity, v. 33. He forbids them to hinder those that in any manner promoted the Gospel, v. 38. And teaches that nothing must come in Competition with Religion, v. 43. The Punishment of evil Ministers, v. 49.

Nd he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

2 ¶ And after fix days, Jefus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themfelves: and he was transfigured before them.

furprized that I speak of appearing hereafter in Glory: For assuredly I tell you, there are some even now here present, who shall live to see the Kingdom of the Messiah begin to be gloriously established, by the terrible Destruction of his Enemies, and by the wonderful Success and Propagation of the Gospel, with great and glorious Manifestations of the Divine Power.

2. ¶. About † Six Days after this; Fesus, to give his Disciples some faint Representation of his suture Gloristication and Majesty which he had mentioned to them, went up with Peter, Fames, and Folm, upon a high Hill; and the Form of his Person was changed in their Sight.

<sup>\*</sup> This Verse plainly belongs to the foregoing Discourse, and ought therefore to have been added to the End of the former Chapter.

<sup>+</sup> Exclusively; which St. Luke inclusively calls Eight Days, Luke 9. 28.

Ch

that

thei

oni

the

fro

fho

ask

W

tha

COL

ed

fir

al

it

S

tl

h

3. For his Face look'd bright as the Sun, and his Cloaths appeared whiter than Snow, so as no Art of Man could make any thing like them.

4. And there appeared at the fame time Moses and Elias, in shining Apparel likewise, talking with Jesus.

5. Then Peter, aftonished with the Glory and Beauty of the Vision, said to Fesus: Lord, what a glorious Place is this! Let us abide here always; and we will make Apartments, for Thee, and for Moses, and for Elias.

6. Thus weakly did the good Man talk, being wholly swallowed up with the mix'd Passions of Admiration, Fear, and Joy; so that he scarce knew what he said.

7. But while he was yet speaking, suddenly there came a Cloud, intercepting Jesus and the Two Prophets from the Apostles Sight; And out of the Cloud came a voice, saying; This is my beloved Son, whom I have sent to reveal to you my whole Will; him hear ye attentively, and obey sincerely and universally.

8. And immediately, when the Cloud was passed over, the Three Apostles, awaking as it were out of a Dream, and looking about them, saw Jesus alone left with them, in his usual Form and Garb.

9. Then they came down from the Hill. And as they were going, Jesus, knowing that this History of his Transfiguration would appear very incredible to those who saw only his Humiliation and Sufferings, commanded the Three Disciples not to say any thing of what they had seen, till after his Resurrestion.

3 And hisraiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no suller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter anfwered and faid to Jefus, Mafter, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overfhadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, faying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And fuddenly when they had looked round about, they faw no man any more, fave Jefus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of Manwere rifen from the dead.

10 And

# Chap. IX.

.

IS

1-

n

)-

n

5;

**(-**

n-

to

is oe

us

a-

e,

es,

ot

or

a-

as

r-

nd

of

ed

ly k-

ey

ıy

ns. ey m

at

10

gs

he

i-

nd

that faying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean,

asked him, faying, Why fay the scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And heanfwered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

## St. MARK.

Thing fecret for the present: Only, having their Minds still filled with the Thoughts of present worldly Glory, they debated privately among themselves, what it was that Fesus meant by his Resurrection from the Dead.

able Manifestation of himself, as the Messiah, they could not doubt: But one great Dissiculty raised it self in their Minds, which was, that the Jewish Doctors had constantly taught, that Elias must first appear, before the Manifestation of the Messiah. This Scruple they could not get over, and therefore they asked Jesus about it.

indeed, as the Scribes had taught, that Elias ought first to appear, to preach Repentance and prepare Mens Hearts for the Reception of the Gospel, before the Messiah manifested himself. He shewed them also, \* how the Scriptures had expresly foretold, that the Messiah must be rejected, and suffer by the Hands of cruel and wicked Men, before his appearing with Power and Glory.

13. But

<sup>\*</sup> The Construction of these words looks as if they were transposed from Verse 10, which then would run thus; the ser to en verse down draw that, no was, &c. what the Rising from the Dead should mean, and how, &c. But this Conjecture not being confirmed by any various Reading, nor by the Opinion of any Commentator that I have seen, I have not ventured to take any Notice of it in the Paraphrase.

the Day

9.37.

after, Luc.

mult

and

have

thee

hath

ever

he to

gnaf

teet.

way

thy

they out,

not.

him

faitl

hov

wit

fhal

brit

bro

hin

fav

Wa

hir the Wa

his

is

Car

1

13. But, faith he, this Prophecy of Elias's appearing first, needs not raise in your Minds any Scruple about the Things which I have told you will shortly be accomplished in me. For Elias is indeed come already, + according as the Prophet foretold he should: For John the Baptist was the Person, of whom Malachi prophesied: But the Fews not knowing that it was He, who was to come in the Power and Spirit of Elias, despised him and suffered him to be flain.

14. S. By this time, Fefus and the Three Apostles that had been with him upon the Hill, were come to the Place where the rest of the Disciples had been left below. And when they drew near, Fesus found a great Multitude gathered together about his Disciples, and the Jewish Doctors disputing with them in hopes to get some Advantage of them in their Master's Absence.

15. Now when the People faw Fefus again, they were furprized with very great Joy. For they knew not to what Place Fesus had retired, nor for how long time he had defigned to abfent himself. Seeing him therefore return again \* fo quickly, they were \* St. Luke furprized, and ran to him with great fays it was Joy, and faluted him.

16. Then Fesus asked the Scribes, what it was that they disputed about with this Disciples.

13 But I fay unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto whatfoever him they listed, as it is written of him,

14 ¶ And when he came to his difciples, he faw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, faluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them? 17 And

<sup>+</sup> Καθως γέγραπται έπο αυτον, plainly refers to έλήλυθε. And the Verse ought to be translated thus; Elias is indeed come, as it is written of him: and they have done to him what they lifted: Or, but they have done to him. &c.

17 And one of the multitude answered and faid, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wherefoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he fometh, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pinethaway: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answered him, and faith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

£-

at

ıt

es

ıt-

le,

eld

tly

ng

m.

ced

hat

ith

ind

nd

as

ed:

brought him unto him: and when he faw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago fince this came unto him?

17. One of the People answered: Sir, it is about a Son of mine, who is afflicted by an evil Spirit with a fore Disease, which deprives him of the Use both of his Speech and Hearing.

18. And his Case is so bad, that when the Fit takes him, it throws him upon the Ground, and he somes at the Mouth, and gnasheth with his Teeth, and the perpetual Vexation of it makes his whole Body waste away. Now I brought him hither in hopes to have him cured by you; and when I sound you not here, I desired your Disciples to cast out the evil Spi-

rit, but they could not.

19. Then Fesus turning himself to Disciples, rebuked them for his their Want of Faith in his Power, which was the Cause why they could not cast out the evil Spirit; and he faid, What an unreasonable Slowness of Belief is this, that after all the Demonstrations I have en you of my Power, and all the Miracles that I have wrought in your Sight, ye should yet for want of Faith be unable to work this Cure! Must I always continue with you? And will you never be able to do any thing unless I be present? Bring the young Man hither to me:

20. Then they brought him to Fefus: And as foon as he came into his Presence, the Spirit convulsed him, and put him into a violent Fit, and threw him down upon the Ground; and there he laid wallowing, and soming at the Mouth.

21. Hereupon Fesus, to show the People the Greatness and Dangerous-ness of his Condition, asked the

young Man's Father, how long his

Son

child.

as

m

fa

hi

ar

W

he

as

W

Ca

k

b

P

Son had been tormented at this rate, And he faid, Of a and when he began first to be subject to this Calamity. The Man answered; It has been thus with him, even

from a Child;

22. Nay and not only thus, but he has frequently been thrown into the Fire, and into the Water, so as to be in great Danger of his Life. Wherefore, saith he to Jesus, if ever any Calamity moved your Compassion, take Pity now on Us, and if you have any Power, relieve us.

23. Fesus said; If you have but true Faith, there is nothing fo difficult which God is not able and willing to do, for those who fincerely and

heartily believe on him.

24. Upon this the Man broke out into Tears, and with great Earnestness Lord, I fincerely believe the Sufficiency of your Power; and I befeech you, let the Abundance of your Goodness and Pity, supply the Imper-

fection of my Faith.

25. All this time the People continued running together, and flocking about Jesus and the Man as they were talking. Which when Jesus observed, he iturned himself toward the afflicted Person, and with a Voice of Authority \* commanded the evil Spirit to depart from him, and never afflict him with that Disease any more.

Whereupon the evil Spirit 26. causing him to roar, and convulsing him terribly, came out. And the

22 And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waterstodestroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and faid with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus faw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the Spirit cried, and rent him fore, and came out of him; and he was

1

<sup>\*</sup> Eyw σοι ἐωιτώσσω. The Word ἐγωis here very Emphatical. You before obeyed not my Disciples; Now I my self command 304.

67

as one dead, infomuch that many faid, He is dead.

27 But Jesustook him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arole.

nes

in-

ito

Oy

uou

ng,

on

nto

nft

ngs

im

ht-

the

and

ars,

7e ; un-

fus

ple

gethe

ing

lou

ſpi-

iee,

irn,

ore

irit im

out

was

as

ati-

and

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he faid This unto them, kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 And they departed thence, and passed thro' Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and faid unto them, The Son of man is deliveredinto the hands of men, and they

young Man lay without Motion and fenfeless, so that many of the Standersby thought he was dead.

27. But Fesus taking him by the Hand, raised him up, and he recovered

perfectly.

28. The Disciples all this while held their Peace, being afraid to give Jesus occasion of rebuking them again in the Presence of the Multitude for their want of Faith. when they were retired alone with him into a House, then they asked him privately, what the Reason was, that they were not able to work this Miracle, as they had done many others.

Tesus said, Twas for want of 29. fufficient Faith, accompanied with Fasting and earnest Prayer to God. For there are some fort of Miracles, faith he, such as this of casting out Devils, which ye cannot attain a Power of effecting, but by an extraordinary Degree of Faith, with fervent and affectionate Prayer, put up by a pure Mind, and with a Devotion raifed and exalted by fasting.

30. ¶ After this, Josus resolving to go into Judea, went with his Disciples by private Ways through Galilee; desiring to conceal himself in the Journey, that he might not be detained from arriving at Ferusalem by his appointed time; and also that he might have Opportunity to give his Disciples some private Instructi-

on.

31. For, faith he to his Disciples, it is positively determined by the Will of God, that I must be delivered into my Enemies Power, and they shall abuse me, and condemn me,

th

th

di

th

Cho

ef

do

th

fa

an

be

fh

ar

2

in

t

h

h

to

1

fi

me, and at last kill me; but on the Third Day I will rife again. Fortify your felves therefore, and be prepa-

red against the Day of Tryal.

32. But the Disciples, though this thing has already been fo often repeated and inculcated upon them, yet having their Minds still intent on worldly Prosperity, they understood not what he meant by dying and rifing again; and they were ashamed to ask

him any more about it.

33. Only in general they thought, that after a little longer continuing in a State of Obscurity and Humiliation, Fesus should manifest himself to be the Messiah, (according to the Prejudices they had entertained concerning him,) with great Temporal Power and Glory. And upon this Occasion \* they fell into a Contention among themselves on the Road, debating which of them should have the Preheminence and be esteemed greater than the rest, when their Master came to manifest himself in that glorious Kingdom. Which weak and vain Contention of theirs, Jesus took no Notice of in the Way; But when he was come to his own House at Capernaum, he called them to him and asked them what they had been disputing about upon the Road.

shall kill him, and after that he is killed he shall rife the third day.

32 But they understood not that faying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your felves, by the way?

<sup>\*</sup> Erasmus's Conjecture is here not improbable, that this Contention might arise between those Three Disciples on the one fide, to whom Jesus seemed now to give some Preheminence, by admitting them to a more private Intimacy with him than the rest, ver. 2. and Ch. 5. ver. 37: And those on the other side, who were their Superiours in Age, or nearer of Kin to Je-1115.

## Chap. IX.

d

1-

le

n-

at

2-

ne

nd

ė,

n,

at

n-

ne ce,

an

er

e-

ut

34 But they held their peace: for by the way they had difputed among themselves who should be the greateft.

35 And he fat down and called the twelve, and faith unto them, If any man defire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a child, and fet him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

27 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth

### St. MARK.

34. The Disciples, ashamed to own that they had disputed about Precedency, held their Peace.

35. Then Jesus, sitting down and bidding them all stand about him and attend, said: Ye are greatly mistaken, if ye think the Kingdom of the Messiah will be like the Kingdoms of this present World, where every Man strives for Honour and Precedence. No; In my Kingdom, they only who are most humble and modest, shall be accounted the Greatest: And Dignity shall not be measured by Temporal Honours and Advantages, but by Mens Humility and Diligence in labouring to serve and to do Good to all.

36. And that this Doctrine might make the stronger Impression upon them, he gave them a sensible Emblem or Representation of it, by calling to him a little Child, which he took up in his Arms and embraced, and setting it down before them, he said:

37. They who defire to be greatest in the Kingdom of God, must be, like this little Child, free from Pride, Contentiousness, and all Ambition. Such Persons as these only, are true and fincere Teachers of the Gospel; And whosoever receives Them and their Dostrine, shall be esteemed to have entertained me, which is the same thing as receiving and obeying the Commandments of God himself.

38. ¶ Upon Occasion of this Discourse, John told Jesus, saying: Master, we saw a Man a while since, casting out Devils in your Name, who was neither one of the Twelve,

2 no

V

of

th

it

th

n

t

i

h

nor of the Seventy whom you fent out to preach, neither had he ever followed you in our Company. Being jealous therefore of your Honour, we forbad him to make use of your Name any more, because he belonged not to us. Did we well in forbidding him, or no?

39. Jesus said, No; ye ought not to discourage any one, whom ye find promoting the Doctrine of the Gospel. For though perhaps he has not the same Knowledge of me, that you have; yet, to be sure, he has fonce Respect and Honour for me: For it can hardly be, that one who casts out Devils in my Name, will speak evil of that Name by which he works his Miracles.

40. And if he has any manner of Respect for me, though it be not so much as to make him joyn with you in following me, nay, though it were no more than such only as prevented him from exposing and hindring you, he ought to be encouraged, and to be look'd upon as of our Side.

41. For there is nothing fo small, which any Man does for the Service of God and promoting his Truth, but shall certainly have a proportionable Recompense. God not only rewards the great and eminent Performances of his best and most faithful Servants; but even every the least Service that is done to Religion, and every the least Expression of Kindness that is made to those who labour in that Work, shall most certainly be rewarded.

notus; and we forbad him, because he followeth notus.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 For who foever fhall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 And

<sup>\*</sup> Probably it was one of John Baptist's Disciples, and who had some Knowledge of Christ.

42 And whofoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him, that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he were

cast into the sea. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched.

44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not

quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched.

46 Where their worm diethnot, and the fire is

quenched.

47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

42. And on the contrary, whofoever by any Means hinders or difcourages any the meanest of God's Servants, either from performing their own Duty, or from propagating the Truth among others; God will fo feverely punish him, that it had been better for him not to have been born at all, or to have perished early by

fome untimely Death.

43, 44, 45, 46, 47 & 48. It may perhaps feem very hard for a Man to avoid all the Ways of falling under this Guilt, and becoming liable to this Punishment. 'Tis possible it may so happen, that he can by no Means do it without incurring some great Difficulties, or denying himself some of the greatest Satisfactions of Life. But if the Case be so, he had better chuse to forsake any Pleasure, or suffer any temporal Inconvenience whatfoever, than fall under the utmost Difpleasure of God. 'Tis possible also that you may be tempted not only to discourage others, but even to apostatize from the Truth your selves, by fome Person or Thing that is very dear to you; to that perhaps you cannot persevere in the Profession and Practife of true Religion, without forfaking some Friend, or parting with fomething as dear to you as any Member of your own Body. But when the Case is thus; as Men chuse to lose a Hand, or a Foot, or an Eye, if there be no other Way of preferving their Life; so ought you readily to forsake any Friend, and part with any Thing, though never so dear to you, rather than fall under the last Severity of the Divine Vengeance, and be cast into that Place of Torment, where there F 3 Will

oruse us.

iid, for nan mine, eak

t is on

ver cup nk, ule ift, ou,

his

Ind

ho

will be nothing but fruitless Remorfe and endless Punishment.

49. For as every Burnt-offering under the Law was first salted with Salt, and then confumed by Fire: So every one, who has been instructed in the Doctrine of the Gospel, if when he is tried, he be found not fincere, shall be \* destroyed by the eternal

Fire of the Divine Wrath.

50. The Doctrine indeed, wherewith I have instructed you, is sufficient to make you truly Wife and Good, and to preserve you from all the Corruptions of this present World, and to enable you to teach others to preferve themselves likewise, unto eternal Life. But now if you, whom I have thus instructed, shall instead of teaching others, fall away your selves from the Profession or Practise of the Truth, either through Hope or Fear of any earthly Thing; ye will become the most unprofitable and inexcufable of Men. Take heed therefore, that ye continue stedfast your selves in the Religion I have taught you; and let no ambitious Defigns and foolish Contentions among your felves, or Fear of outward Sufferings and Persecutions, hinder the Propagation of the Truth among others.

40 For every one shall be salted with fire, and every facrifice shall be salted with falt.

50 Salt is good: but if the falt have lost his faltness, wherewith will you feafon it? Have falt in your felves, and have peace one with another.

\* The Emphasis of this Comparison, as Mr. le Clerc well obferves, lies in the Ambiguity of the Word ממלח, which fig-nifies both shall be falted and shall be destroyed. As every Sacrifice is salted (ימלח) with Salt; so every Apostate shall be destroyed (not in the other Signification of the same Word) with Fire.

one

rith r falted

od:

nave

ess,

you falt and

vith

lob-

fig-

Sae de-

with

### CHAP. X.

Of Divorce, v. 2. Jesus blesses young Children, and rebukes his Disciples that would have hindred them from being brought, v. 13. Tells a rich young Man the Conditions of eternal Life under the Gospel, v. 17. Shews his Disciples the great Danger and Temptations of Riches, v. 23. and the Happiness of Suffering for Religion, v. 28. Foretels his own Death, v. 32. Reproves his Disciples ambitious and worldly Thoughts, v. 35. Cures a blind Man, v. 46.

AND he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and as he was wont, he taught themagain.

I. JEsus, having thus fortified the Minds of his Disciples against the Storm that was coming upon them, and prepared them for the great Tryal which they were to undergo in seeing him suffer; departed from Galilee, and went into Judaa, through that part of the Country which was called, The Country beyond Jordan. Where the People gathered together again about him; and he, as usual, both healed the Diseases of their Bodies, and instructed their Minds with wise Doctrine.

2 ¶ And the Pharifees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to putaway hiswife? tempting him.

2. And here the Pharifees also, according to their Custom, came about him to try to infnare him with captious Questions, hoping to provoke him to say something that might afford Matter of Accusation against him. They asked him therefore; Is it lawful for a Man to put away his Wife? Thinking with themselves, that if he should say absolutely it was not lawful, they might then accuse him of opposing Moses; and if he should say absolutely it was lawful, he might then seem to contradict \* his own Doctrine. \* Mas. If

F 4 3. But 32

4. The *Pharifees* answered; *Mases* gave a Man liberty in some Cases, to put away his Wife by giving her a Bill of Divorce, and to marry another.

5. Jesus said: 'Tis true; Moses did indeed grant you this Permission; but 'twas merely in Condescension to your stubborn and untractable Temper: Not that the Thing was fit in it self; but only to prevent greater Evils.

6. For the original Design of God, before Mankind sell into a degenerate and corrupt State, was quite otherwise: In the Beginning He created them Male and Female, (Gen. 1. 27.) and joyned them together, one Man with one Woman, by an inseparable Tie of Nature and Love.

7 & 8. So that the Scripture faith, (Gen. 2. 24.) A Man shall leave all other the tenderest Obligations of natural Affection, forsaking his nearest and most dear Relations, even his own Father and Mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife, and they two shall be one Flesh. Wherefore since God has declared them to be but one Body, they ought to be always look'd upon as such; and ought no more to be separated, than the Parts of one and the same Body.

9. And though Moses, because of the Hardness of your Hearts, did indeed for a time allow Divorces; yet this forced Permission ought not to continue always; it being very unsit for Man to put those asunder, whom

## Chap. X.

ho

as

th

ur

ev

hi

te

h

1

defi

3 And heanfwered and faid unto them, Whatdid Mofes command you?

4 And they faid, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put heraway.

5 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto them. For the hardness of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

8 Andthey twain fhall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put afunder.

10 And

r-

)-

d,

0

1-

0

te

ır

u

C

S

no And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he faith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committethadultery against her.

man shall put way her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

brought young children to him, that he fhould touch them; and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 And when Jefus faw it, he was much displeased, and faid unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

God originally defigned to unite together by fo strict and indisfoluble a Tie.

10. With this Answer the Pharifees went away filenced; Jesus having so tempered his Reply, as to maintain the Excellency of God's original Institution, without condemning the Law of Moses. But when the Disciples were alone with Jesus in the House, they asked him again concerning this Matter.

11. Jesus said: It is certainly true, as ye have heard me tell the Pharisees. Whosoever shall put away his Wise, (\* excepting only if it be for the Crime of Adultery,) and marry ano-\* Matt. 5. ther; shall be accounted an Adulte-32. & 10. rer in the Sight of God:

12. And if a Woman forfakes her Husband, and marries herfelf to another Man, she shall be accounted guilty of Adultery.

13. ¶. About this time, certain Persons brought young Children to Fesus, desiring him to lay his Hands upon them, and bless them. Which when the Disciples observed, they were displeased, thinking that this was too small a Matter to trouble fesus with; and they chid those who brought the Children.

14. But Jesus on the contrary, incouraged them, and rebuked his Disciples for endeavouring to hinder them: And he said, Let the Children by all Means be brought to me, and forbid them not: For these, and Men of like Temper with these, innocent, harmless, and without Malice, are the only sit Persons to become Members of the Church of

God on Earth, and Partakers of his eternal Happiness in Heaven.

15. Affuredly I tell you, who foever shall pretend to embrace the Gospel, without being regenerate and born again; for saking all Ambition, Craft, and Malice; and becoming in his Temper like one of these little Children; shall never be owned by God as a

true and fincere Christian, either here or hereafter.

16. Then taking the little Children up in his Arms, he embraced them, and laid his Hand upon them, and gave them his Bleffing.

17. ¶. After this, Jesus departed, continuing his Journey towards Jesus Jalem. And as he was in the Way, there met him a young Man of Quality, who kneeling down before him, said: Good Master, I am convinced by what I have heard of your Works and Doctrine, that you are an extraordinary Teacher sent from God; Tell me what I must do, that I may be qualified to be made Partaker of eternal Life.

18. Jefus faid to him: Why do you call me Good, whom you do not know to be any other than a meer Man? There is none perfectly and effentially good, but God only, who is the fole Author of all Goodness

and Happiness.

19. However, as to your Question; you know the Commandments, the Performance of which, God has declared to be the Condition of Life and Happiness; viz. Not to commit Adultery, nor any Uncleanness; not to murder, nor hurt any Man; not to steal, deceive or cheat; not to

15 Verily I fay unto you, Whofoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and bleffed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life.

h

h

la

í

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good, but one, that is God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And

20 And he anfwered and faid unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

2 I Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and faid unto him, Onething thou lackest: go thy way, sell what soever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

22 And he was fad at that faying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jefus looked round about, and faith unto his

pervert Justice, nor accuse any one falsely; not to be so covetous nor desirous of what belongs to another, as to be prevailed upon by that Temptation, to use any indirect Means to over-reach him or hinder him of his Due; to honour and reverence your Parents and all other Superiors; and the like.

20. The young Man, pleased with this Answer, and hoping to be highly commended by Fesus for his Virtue, said; Master, I have all my Life-time carefully and sincerely obeyed all these Commandments; Is there any Thing surther that you think necessary to advise me?

21. Then Fesus, looking intently upon the young Man, and feeming to be pleased with his hopeful Dispositions, yet designing at the same time to discover the Infirmity of Humane Confidence, faid to him: If you defire to attain the \* highest De- \* See Note gree of Perfection, then there is one on Mat. Thing more for you to do; you must 19. 21. fell all your Estate, and give it to the Poor, and for the future contemn all worldly Possessions; and come and follow me, preaching the Goipel, and resolving to bear all Afflictions and Persecutions that this State of Life will expose you to; and you shall have a great and extraordinary Reward in Heaven.

22. But the young Man was greatly disappointed and troubled at this Answer, and went away very forrowful; for he had a great Estate, and could not bear to think of parting with it all at once.

23. Whereupon Fesus took occafion to represent to his Disciples the great

(

be

hi

le

lo

fv

ri

T

or

er

th

dr

fal

ce fo

tin

br

an

ch

W

an

ar

an

great Danger and Temptation of Riches; And he faid, How exceeding difficult a Thing is it, for those who have great Riches, to become sincere Christians, and to attain that resigned Disposition of Mind, which is necessary to fit Men for the Service of God on Earth, and for the Enjoyment of his Happiness in Heaven!

24. At which Saying, the Disciples were mightily-furprized and startled; as if Jesus had said, It was impossible for any rich Man to be saved. But Jesus corrected their Mistake, saying; The Dissiculty of rich Mens being saved, does not arise from their bare Possession of Wealth, but from their placing their Considence in it, from their setting their Hearts and Affections upon it, so as thereby to be hindred from the Performance of their Duty.

25. And this Confidence rich Men are so very apt to place in their Riches, that nothing can well be imagined more difficult, than for a Man that has very great Possessions, to wean his Affections so much from them, as to be willing to part with them for the Sake of Religion, when he cannot otherwise be a worthy and persevering Christian.

26. At this the Disciples seemed again exceedingly amazed, saying one to another; How then can any rich Man ever be saved?

27. But Jesus, looking upon them with Pity and Concern for their Infirmity and Solicitude of Mind, replied: This, indeed, may seem an impossible Thing, to the common Judgment and vulgar Affections of Men; but to the Grace of God, no-

disciples, How hardly shall they that have richesenter into the kingdom of God!

24 And his disciples were astonished at his words. But Jefus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

aftonished out of measure, faying among themselves, Who then can be faved?

27 And Jesuslooking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

289 Then

28 ¶ Then Peter began to fay unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

d

e-

1,

1,

d

at

1-

ra

gh le,

an

he

ere

ot

2-

res,

be

ok-

ith,

m-

not

are

hen

29 And Jefus anfwered and faid, Verily I fay unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or fisters, or father, or mother, or wise, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred. fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with perfecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

3 I But many that are first, shall be last: and the last, first.

thing is impossible or difficult. God can and will afford his fincere Servants such Assistance, as shall enable them not only to use Riches well, but also to part with them readily, and if any thing else be yet more dear to them, to relinquish even That also with all Chearfulness, when God shall require it, for the Sake of Religion.

28. Then faid Peter to Fesus: Well, We have actually done all this; and though our Possessions were not great, yet whatever they were, we have forsaken them all for your Sake and the Gospels: What Reward then shall We have?

29 & 30. Jesus said; There is no one who has forfaken any earthly Possessions or Friends, for my Sake and the Profession of true Religion; who shall not even in the midst of the greatest Persecutions, have such Comfort and Satisfaction in his own Mind, fuch Love and Affiftance from all good Men, and fuch Peace and Joy by the continual Influence of the Spirit of God, as will even in this prefent Life be a hundred times better to him, than all the Things that he is forced to part with; and moreover, in the World to come, he shall inherit eternal Life.

31. Only many of those, who are here first in Time, and seem now to have the Preserence in many Respects, (as the Jews, that are first called; and others who come earliest to the Knowledge of the Truth;) shall then be ranked in a lower Degree. And on the contrary, many of those who are here later in Time, and seem now to be inferior in many Respects, (as the

the Gentiles, and such as come latest to the Knowledge of the Truth;) shall then, if they have been sincere and more diligent in their Time, equal or exceed the former in Dignity and Glory.

Disciples by the Way, as they were going towards ferusalem. But the Disciples, seeing fesus positively resolved to go thirher, began to be exceeding apprehensive of the Danger to which they were likely to be exposed; and they followed fesus with heavy Hearts, in great Fear and Amazement. Then fesus calling the Twelve Apostles to him again, repeated to them, what he had often told them before, that he must of Necessity suffer such and such Things.

33. And he faid: This is the Time, of which I have already frequently warned you. We are now going up to ferusalem, and there I must be delivered into the Hands of the Chief Priests and Elders that seek my Life, and they will condemn me as a Malefactor, and deliver me over to the Roman Soldiers to be executed.

34. And the Soldiers will abuse me with all Manner of Ignominy; infulting, beating, and spitting upon me; and at last they will put me to Death; But on the Third Day I will rise again.

35. ¶. What Fesus meant by this Account of the Sufferings that he was to undergo, the Apostles, after so many repeated Admonitions, still understood not. But upon his mentioning his Rising again, they conceived some obscure Hopes, that after all

32 ¶ And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them; and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

un

W

fho

hi

tha

on

an

lef

gle

un

kr

as

th

of

W

th

W

u

th

de

C

ai

ti

ti

y

n

is

it

33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes: and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles;

34 And they shall mockhim, and shall spit upon him, and shall shill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

35 ¶ And James and John the fons of Zebedee come unto him, faying, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall desire. 36 And

36 And he faid unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? 37 They faid unto him, Grant unto us that we may fit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy

left hand, in thy

yd

d

2-

of

r-

ef

ne

y

m

all

he

all

all

nd

n,

1:

he

es

of

to

er,

ou

us

all

nd

glory. 38 But Jesus said unto them,

know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism

that I am baptized

Ye

with?

39 And they faid unto him, We can. And Jefus faid unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized;

40 But to fit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

this, he would yet manifest himself e're long in great Power and Glory, and establish (as they still fondly imagined) a temporal Kingdom. hereupon Two of them, viz. Fames and John, came with their Mother to Fefus to intercede with him, that he would grant them one Petition they had to ask.

36 & 37. Which when Fesus demanded what it was; they faid, We defire that when thou appeareft in thy Kingdom, thou wouldest grant us the first Place of Honour and Dignity, and that we may be next to thine own Person.

38. But Fesus replied: Ye are in a great Mistake, and have a very wrong Notion of the Nature of my Kingdom. Ye aim at temporal Greatness and Preheminence, and know not upon what Conditions Glory and Happiness will be bestowed in the Kingdom of God. Are ye able to suffer with me? And can ye follow my Example in bearing patiently all manner of Injuries, and even Death it felf, for the take of the Truth?

39. They faid unto him, We are able to do this. Then Fesus replied: Ye shall indeed follow me in Persecutions and Sufferings, and may thereby, in Proportion to your Patience and Constancy, obtain a Share of Glory and Happiness with me in the Kingdom of God:

40. But as to the chief Place of Dignity and Preference above others, this is not mine to dispose of by any absolute Favour; but it must be given to such Persons, and upon such Conditions and Qualifications, as God

n

u

li

n

Ca

W

of

of

th

be

he

Te

be

fa

of

Cy

ch

he

pe

th

de

D

on

fti

ed

an

bli

un

he

God in his infinite Wisdom has de-

termined and appointed.

41. Thus Jesus with great Meekness reproved the Ambition and Weakness of these Two Brothers. But when the other Ten Apostles knew what it was that these Two had desired, they began to be very angry at them for their ambitious Desires; not without having something of the same Ambition and Envy themselves, for fear the Two Brothers should have been preferred before them.

42. Then Jesus calling them all to him, said: Ye have all of you still very wrong Apprehensions of the Nature of my Kingdom. Among the Gentiles indeed, and in the Kingdoms of this present World, Men strive ambitiously to get the Dominion one over another; And they who can farthest extend their Power, and rule with the largest and most absolute Authority, are counted the greatest Men, and have the most Honour and Respect paid them.

43. But in the Kingdom of God Things shall be ordered by quite different Measures He that desires to be greatest and most honourable among you, let him endeavour to become so by an extraordinary Degree of Meekness and Humility; and let him exercise his Power, not in domineering over any, but in assisting and doing good to all.

44. And he that defires to have the greatest Dignity and Preheminence among you, let him become eminent by his Modesty and Humility, and Readiness to serve all Men.

45. For thus even I my felf, whom ye ought to obey and to imitate,

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

42 But Jefus called them to him, and faith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercife lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whofoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be fervant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not e

ıl-

nd Ye

ey

it-

he

ife

n;

ies

ity

lit

u:

vill

ou,

ni-

oe-

be

be

the

ime

not

not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, fat by the high-way-side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and fay, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mer-

cy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jefus flood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blind man, faying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

came not into the World to exercise Power and Dominion, to rule over Men, and to be served by them; but to serve and do good to all Men, to assist and relieve the Needy, to strengthen and support the Weak, to instruct the Ignorant, to reclaim the Wicked, and to lay down my Life to procure Pardon and Reconciliation for the Penitent.

46. ¶ After these Instructions given to the Disciples, Jesus continued on his Journey towards Jerusalem. And when he was passed through Jericho, with his Disciples and a great Multitude of others following him, there sat by the side of the Road, thro' which Jesus was to go, \* a blind Man \* One of

called Bartimeus, who used to sit there the Two. and beg.

47. This Man, enquiring of the Mat. 20. Multitude, and being told that Jesus was passing by, cried out aloud to Jesus, saying; Lord, I have heard of the many wonderful Works that you have done, and I believe you to be the promised Messiah, sent by God to redeem his People; I beseech you, pity my sad Condition.

48. And the People rebuked him, bidding him forbear making fuch a Noise, to disturb I fus and stop him upon the Road. But the blind Man continued to cry out with the greater Earnestness; O thou Son of David, I beseech thee, have Compassion on

me.

49. Then Jesus stopping, bad those which were about him bring the blind Man to him. And they told the blind Man, saying; Come, rise up, and be chearful; Jesus calls for you to come to him.

G 50. Upon

51. And when he was come, Jefus asked him; What is it that you desire I should do for you? The blind Man answered; Lord, I desire that I

may receive my Sight.

52. Then Jesus said; According as you have believed that I have Power to effect this Thing, so be it done to you. And immediately his Sight came to him, and he saw all Things distinctly; And he went with the rest of the People after Jesus.

Chap. XI.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jefus anfwered, and faid unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blind man faid unto him, Lord, that I might receive my fight.

fi diti

ſ

t

t d Pv

t

title

t t t cai

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath made the whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in

the way.

#### CHAP. XI.

Jesus rideth into Jerusalem, v. 1. Curseth the Fig-Tree, v. 13. Casteth the Traders out of the Temple, v. 15. Of the Disposition of Mind necessary to Prayer, v. 24, 25. Jesus confoundeth the Jews with a Question about John's Baptism, v. 27.

his Disciples drew near to Ferusalem, and were over-against the Villages Bethphage and Bethany, at the Foot of the Mount of Olives; Fesus, knowing that the Time of his Suffering was now come, and therefore no longer endeavouring to conceal himfelf, but resolving to enter into the City publickly, he bad Two of his Disciples go into the Village Bethphage, and take a young Ass, which they should

ND when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And faith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you; and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall find find a colt tied, whereon never man fat; loofe him, and

bring him.

it,

to

n-

n-

ilt

ld

ne

to

I

ıy

id

14

th

nd

·e-

nd

in

V.

Of

25. n's

ien

ne

m,

ind

the

he

NO

ito

ray

ver

ind

en-

hall

ind

3 And if any man fay unto you, Why do ye this? fay ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will fend him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met: and they

loose him.

5 And certain of them that ftood there, faid unto them, What do ye loofing the colt?

6 And they faid unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let

them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jeius, and cast their garments on him: and he fat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cutdown branches off the trees, and strawed them

in the way.

9 And they that went before, they that followed, cried, faying, Hofanna, bleffed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our fafind tied by a Door in the Street at their entrance into the Town, bring it to Him.

3. And if any Man, faith he, questions you by whose Order ye take away the Ass; tell him, The Lord has need of it. And Providence shall fo order Things, that you shall be suffer-

ed to bring it away unmolested.

4. Accordingly the Two Disciples went into the Village; and finding the young Ass, as Fesus had told them, tied by a Door at the Top of the Street; they untied him, and began to lead him away.

5 6. And when the People that stood by, seeing two Strangers taking away the Ass, asked them, What they had to do with it, and by whose Orders they took it away? The Disciples answered in the words which Fesus commanded them, The Lord has need of it. And they let the Disciples go away with it undifturbed.

7. Then they brought the Ass to Fesus, and having laid their Cloaths upon the back of it, they fet fefus up, and he rode upon it towards fe-

rufalem.

8. And some spread their Cloaths in the Road, as at the triumphal Entrance of a great Prince; and others strewed the Way with Boughs cut down from the Trees.

9 & 10. And all the People both before and behind, made great Acclamations, faying, Bleffed and profperous be this great Prophet, whom the Lord hath fent to visit his People. God preserve and establish the Kingdom of the Messias, as he established the Kingdom of our Father David;

Ch

15

com

and

the t

gan

that

in the

over

of t

gers

of

dov

fuff

Thor

fel t

ple.

fayi

Isit

hou

of

hou

but

2 de

fo

he

alt

th

And let Peace and Glory attend it for ever.

11. Then Jesus entred into the City openly and with great Solemnity. And he went directly to the Temple; where he taught the People, and cured feveral diseased Persons, and took a View of the Temple and its Service all Day; and at Night he retired with his Twelve Apostles to Berhany.

ed again with his Disciples from Bethany to Jerusalem; and as he was in the Way, he grew hungry.

13. And observing at a distance a Figtree full of Leaves, he went up to it to see if he could find any thing upon it, wherewith to satisfie his Hunger: But when he came to it, it had nothing but Leaves, without any Fruit \* at that Season.

14. Jesus therefore cursed it, saying; Let nothing ever grow on thee more: Signifying thereby to his Disciples That Curse which should shortly fall upon the Jews, for their making only outward Pretences of Religion, without any real Holiness; like bearing Leaves without Fruit. And the Disciples observed, when Jesus thus cursed the Tree.

ther David, that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hofanna in the highest.

11 And Jefusentred into Jerufalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the even-tide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were comefrom Bethany, he was hun-

13 And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his difciples heard it.

<sup>\* &#</sup>x27;Tis most probable and natural to suppose, that the Tree was barren, or at least failed that one Season; especially if instead of xaspos we might read xappos, there was no Fruit on it. But since no Copies read it so, it is by no means absurd to imagine, that our Saviour might at any time cause a Tree full of Leaves without Fruit to wither, (though it were no Defect in the Tree, but only on account of the Season that it had no Fruit on it;) to represent the Fate of the hypocritical fews. For Similitudes are not to be carried on beyond the main thing intended; at least there is no Necessity of doing it.

it

ne

7-

ed

nd

nd

ed

all

he

c,

0

he

he

ey

c-

n-

2

ff,

he

he

ng

en

he

ut

ne

t.

nto

iit

or

ci-

ee nit.

to

ee

10

at

al

it.

15 ¶ And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that fold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that fold doves;

16 And would not fuffer that any man should carry any veffel through the tem-

17 And hetaught, faying unto them, Isit not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it aden of thieves.

15. Then they went on to Jerusalem: And as soon as they came thither, Jesus went into the Temple; and sinding the Court of the Gentiles (which was a Part of the Temple appointed for the Gentile Proselytes to worship in, and therefore by the Jews accounted less holy than the other Parts of the Temple: Jesus, I say, sinding this Place) full of trading People, buying and selling and changing Money; he was displeased at it, and \* turned them all out, and ordered their Seats to be taken away.

16. And he forbad the People to carry any Burdens, or any Goods or Merchandize, thro' the Courts of the Temple.

17. For, said he, does not the Scripture say, Esa. 56, 7; Even the Sons of the Stranger that join themselves to the Lord, will I bring to my holy Mountain, and make them joyful in my House of Prayer: For my House shall be called a House of Prayer to All Nations? This Place therefore, which is appointed for the Gentile Proselytes to worship in, is truly holy and separated for the Service of God, as well as the rest of the Temple: And ye do very ill, to make it not only a common Thorough-fare, but even a Place of Fraud, Deceit, and Cheating.

<sup>\*</sup> It is related by St. Matthew, that Jesus did this a Day sooner, and before he cursed the Fig-tree. Either therefore he turned out these People Two Days together, which is not altogether improbable; or else one of the Evangelists neglected the Exactness of Time, as of no Importance in this Story.

(

u

th

be

ce

fh

gi ag

W

y

W

fo

pa

CC

W

pl hi

ar

th

h

ri

th

18. Thus Jesus with Authority forbad the prophaning of Sacred Places. But when the Chief of the Jewish Teachers heard of it, who were resolved not to be instructed or reformed, and feared that if Jesus were suffered to go on thus, their Authority would quickly sink among the People; they consulted among themselves, and resolved to cause Jesus to be put to Death; but could not tell which way to accomplish their Design, for fear of the People, who greatly admired Jesus's Doctrine, and were perswaded that he was a Prophet sent from God.

19. ¶ Now at Night Jesus retired again with his Disciples from Jerusalem

to Bethany.

20. And in the Morning, as they were coming back, they faw the Figtree, which Jesus had curied the Day before, withered away to the very Roots.

21. At which sudden Alteration, Peter and the rest of the Disciples were surprized, and said to Josus; Master, look how the Fig-tree, which you cursed Yesterday, is quite withered and dead.

22. But Jesus said, Be not surprized at the Strangeness of this Thing; but learn to believe firmly the Power

of God, and to trust upon it.

23. For affuredly I tell you, there is nothing so difficult, but if ye set about it in the Fear and for the Glory of God, with a firm Belief and full Trust in his Power, without any Mixture of Doubting or Unbelief; it shall certainly be accomplished.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was assonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter callingtoremembrance, faith unto him, Mafter, behold, the fig-tree which thou curfedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus anfwering, saith unto them, Have saith in

God

23 For verily I fay unto you, that whofoever shall fay unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and bethou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which hesaith shallcome to pass, he shall have what soever he saith.

24 There-

ts

ıt

e-

ey fe

as

iis

e-

he the

he

ney

w

up

cal-

nce,

Mathe

hou

her-

an-

nto

h in

y I

that

fay

tain,

red,

into

not

eart,

that

hich

ne to

have aith.

iere-

24 Therefore I fay unto you, What things foever ye defire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

26 But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven, forgive your treipailes.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerufalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and thescribes, and the elders,

28 And fay unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

## St. MARK.

24. When therefore ye pray at any time to God, that he would give Success to your just and pious Endeavours, believe firmly that God is both able and willing to grant what you fo defire; and your Request shall certainly be performed.

25. Only, as the Things which ye pray for ought to be just and good; fuch as may tend to the Glory of God and the Happiness of Men; so the Difpositions with which ye pray, ought to be pious and charitable, merciful and ready to forgive, fuch as may move God to extend Mercy and Forgiveness

26. For if, when ye pray, ye be in a Disposition and Readiness to forgive others who have offended you; God will also forgive your Offences against Him, and graciously hear and answer your Prayers. But if ye will not forgive others; neither will God forgive you, or regard your Prayers.

Then Jesus entred again with his Disciples into Ferusalem. And as he was walking in the Temple, the chief Priests and Teachers and Rulers of the Jews, angry at his having cast the Tradesmen and Merchants out of the Temple, and at his Teaching the People with Plainness and Freedom, came about him to watch for Matter of Acculation against him.

28. And because they could not either confute his Doctrine or deny his Miracles, they asked him by what Authority he acted and taught fuch Things, and Who gave him this Authority? Hoping to find some handle to accuse

him of Sedition.

29. Fesus, knowing that they did not this with any Desire of being informed, but only sought for some Pretence to accuse him, answered them with another Question thus: If you, saith he, will answer one Question which I shall propose to you; then I also will answer that, which you have proposed to me.

30. Now my Question is this: When John the Baptist came and baptized amongst you, did he act by Divine Commission, or was his Preaching and Baptizing a meer Humane De-

fign?

31 & 32. Upon this Question, these Jewish Doctors reasoned thus with themselves: That if they should say, John acted by Divine Commission; then Jesus might justly accuse them for not believing John, who bore Testimony concerning Jesus: But if they should say, John had no Authority; then the People, who all believed John to be a Prophet really sent by God, would be ready to stone them.

33. They answered therefore to Fefus; We cannot tell whether John actect by Divine Commission or no. And Jesus then in like manner to them; neither do I, saith he, tell you by what Authority I act and teach these Things. 29 And Jefus anfwered and faid
unto them, I will
alfo ask of you one
question, and answer
me, and I will tell
you by what authorityI do these things.

30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reafoned with themfelves, faying, If we shall fay, From heaven, he will fay, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But if we shall fay, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they anfwered and faid unto Jefus, We cannot tell. And Jefus anfwering faith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP.

d ll e

11

s.

of

n

a-

]-

 $\mathbf{If}$ 

m

y,

ye

all

ey

e:

ed

a

n-

no

ot

n-

to

I

u-

efe

#### CHAP. XII.

The Parable of the Vineyard let out to wicked Husbandmen, v. 1. applied to signifie the casting off the Jews, and receiving the Gentiles, v. 10. Jesus answers the Pharisees, about paying Tribute to Cæsar, v. 14. And the Sadducees, about the Resurrection, v. 18. And the Scribe, upon a Question, which was the chief and most necessary Part of the Law, v. 28. and shames them all with a Question about the Messiah being David's both Son and Lord, v. 35. He warns his Disciples against Ambition and Hypocrise, v. 38. And shows from the Example of a poor Widow, that Piety and Charity is not to be measured by the outward Act, but by the Intention and Zeal of the Mind, v. 41.

ND he began to fpeak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and fet an hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

I. A T this Time Jesus spake several Parables or Similitudes, to the Scribes and Chief of the Jews in the Hearing of the People; wherein he fignified to them, that the Nation of the Jews having rejected the gracious Offer of the Gospel and the Divine Mercy, should have this great Privilege taken from them and given to another People. Particularly, among others, he gave them this Com-A certain Person, saith he, planted a Vine-yard; and having furnished it with all Things necessary for Convenience, Ornament and Defence, he employed Husbandmen to dress it, and gather the Fruit of it, and travelled himfelf into a distant Country: Thus God at the Beginning of the World revealed his Will to Mankind; and particularly to the Nation of the Jews, at the giving of the Law; expecting that they should bring forth the Fruits of Holiness and Obedience, proportionable to their Advantages and Degrees of Know-

ledge.

Vintage the Owner sent his Servant to these Husbandmen, to receive of them the Fruit of his Vineyard; they instead of justly returning him his Due, most ungratefully beat his Servant, and sent him home empty: Thus when God expected that the Jews should chearfully obey the Law he had given them for their own Happiness, they on the contrary with all Ingratitude rebelled against him, and abused his Prophets which he sent to reform them.

4 & 5. Again, the Master of the Vineyard sent other Servants to the Husbandmen; and after them, Others; But all these also the Husbandmen treated in like manner; sending some of them home with Contempt, beaten and abused; and others they killed outright: Thus God sent more Prophets to the Jews from time to time, to exhort them to repent, and to return to their Obedience; but they despised and rejected the Admonitions of the Prophets; persecuting them, misusing them, and even murdering some of them.

6. After all this, the Owner of the Vineyard, having one only Son whom he loved, resolved to send Him to the Husbandmen, to receive the Fruit of his Vineyard; thinking, that surely they would be ashamed and afraid to affront his Son: Thus God, after all other Means had proved ineffectual, sent at last his own Son into the World, with much long-suffering, to make to the Jews the last Offers of Repentance and Reconciliation.

2 And at the feafon he fent to the husbandmen a fervant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and beat him, and fent him away

empty.

4 And again he fent unto them another fervant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he fent another; and him they killed: and many others, beating fome, and killing fome.

6 Having yet therefore one fon, his well-beloved, he fent him alfo last unto them, faying, They will reverence my fon.

# Chap. XII.

7 But those hufbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he shall come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

not read this scripture? The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner.

### St. MARK.

7 & 8. But the Malice of the Husbandmen was now grown to exceed all measure, so that it was not to be conquered by any Kindness or Forbearance; When therefore they faw their Lord's Son, they thought, if he were but once destroyed, they should then be disturbed no more in their unjust Possession; and accordingly they cast him out of the Vineyard, and flew him: Thus the Jews, to their continued Difobedience and Impenitence, added this also at length, to fill up the Measure of their Iniquity; that they rejected and despised the Son of God himself, and at the very time when this Parable was spoken, were just preparing to condemn and kill him.

9. Now, faid Jesus, when the Master of the Vineyard returns, what will
he do to these wicked Husbandmen? The
Scribes and chief Teachers of the
Jews, not yet perceiving the true Intent of the Parable, \* answered: He \* Mat. 21.
will miserably destroy those ungrateful and 41.
rebellious Wretches; and will let out his
Vineyard to others, who shall duly render
him his Fruit in its Season.

judged well, and have passed a just Sentence upon your selves; For This is your own Case, and ye are the Persons to whom God thus entrusted his Vineyard, which is his Church; But when he expected from you the Fruits of Holiness and Obedience, ye on the contrary persecuted and slew his Prophets; and when he sent unto you his only Son, ye have rejected Him also, and are now going about to kill him: \* Therefore God \* Mat. 21. will take away from you the Privi-43. ledges of the Gospel, and give them

to

to another People who shall serve him better; and Christ, being rejected by the Chief of the Jews, shall receive the Gentiles and unite Them into his † Pf. 118. Church, in like manner † as the principal Corner-stone in a House, unites and keeps the two Sides of a Building

together.

Divine Power, and an extraordinary Instance of the immediate and over-ruling Influence of God's peculiar Pro-

vidence.

Scribes, feeing that Jefus at last thus plainly applied the Parable to Them, in great Rage and Indignation resolved to lay hold upon him, and have him put to Death. But for fear of the People, who they saw were pleafed with his Doctrine and admired his Miracles, they durst not venture to apprehend him openly upon this Account, and by their own Authority.

13. They contrived therefore to fend to him some of the Pharisees and of the Followers of *Herod*, to propose infinaring Questions to him, and to try if they could draw any Words from him, which they might improve into Matter of Accusation against him be-

fore the Roman Governour.

14. Accordingly these Spies went to him, and said: Master, we are fully satisfied that you are a Teacher sent from God, that you dare speak the Truth with all Freedom, and that you will not be restrained by Fear or Respect to any Man whatsoever, from declaring to us plainly the Will of God. Tell us therefore; Ought we Jews,

Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

fought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had fpoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

fend unto him certain of the Pharifees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they fay unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way

of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cefar, or not?

or shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrifie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a peny, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it: and he faid to them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesars.

17 And Jefus anfwering faid unto them, Render to Cefar the things that are Cefars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

18 ¶ Then come unto him the Sadducees, which fay there is no refurrection; and they asked him, faying,

1

Mafter, Moses wrote untous, if a mans brother die,

who are God's peculiar People, to pay Tribute to the Roman Emperor, or no?

15. This they asked, thinking with themselves that if Jesus should say absolutely, They ought not to pay Tribute, he might then be accused to the Governour, of designing to move Sedition; and if he should say, They ought, then he might fall under the Envy of the People, for asserting the Romans Right of keeping them in subjection. But Jesus, knowing their malicious Design, said; Why do you lay Snares for me, ye Hypocrites? Show me a Piece of that Money wherein your Tribute is demanded to be paid.

16. And when they brought it to him, he asked them Whose Image and Inscription it bore; they said,

Cæfar's.

17. Then faid Jesus; Pay therefore to Casar what is Casar's Due; and be always so far subject to the Government ye are under, as is consistent with your Obedience to the Commands of God. Which Answer being so wise and just, that they could not any way wrest it to accuse him on Either Side, without exposing themselves to the Censure and Indignation of the People; they went away from him, greatly surprized at his Wisdom and Caution.

18. ¶ After These were gone, came some of the Sadducees, who believe no suture State after this present Life; and they asked Fesus saying:

19. Master, the Law appoints (Deut. 25. 5.) that if a Man dies

and leaves his Wife without any Children, his Brother should marry his Widow, and raise up an Heir for him, to keep up his Name.

20. Now there were among us Seven Brethren, whereof one married a Wife; and dying, left his Wife with-

out any Children.

21 & 22. Whereupon another of the Brethren, according to the Law, married the same Woman; and he died also without Children; and a third likewise after him; and in short, they all Seven married her, and died without Children; and the Woman died last.

23. Now if there be, as you teach, a future State, and another Life after this; whose Wife must this Woman be in that future State? For they

all alike married her.

24. But Jesus, pitying their Ignorance, said: Ye talk very foolishly; neither considering the Power of God, that he who created Man in this present State, can as easily continue him in a future; nor understanding what kind of State that future Life is, which the Scripture teaches us to expect.

25. For That future Life shall not be like this present State, as ye fondly imagine. For here indeed continual Mortality makes Marriage necessary to preserve a Succession of Men: But in that other State, Men shall be immortal like the Angels now in Heaven; and as there will be no Death, so neither will there be any need of Marrying.

26. And that there shall really be such a Life after this, the Scripture sufficiently declares, in those Words

and leave his wife behind him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were feven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no feed.

21 And the fecond took her, and died, neither left he any feed: and the third likewise.

22 And the feven had her, and left no feed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the refurrection therefore, when they shall rife, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus anfwering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rife: have ye

not

not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.

d

.

d

ft

è-

nd

of

ed.

ır-

e,

ie,

The

he

to

an-

nto

not

be-

not

nei-

of

hey

the

ther

giv-

but

ngels

hea-

uch-

that

not

28 ¶ And one of the fcribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 And Jefus anfwered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Ifrael, the Lord our God is one Lord?

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy foul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the fecond is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbourasthy felf: there is none

St. MARK.

which God spake to Moses out of the Bush, saying; I am the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

27. For fince those holy Men received not a full Performance of God's Promises while they were upon Earth, and God cannot properly be called the God of those that are utterly perished; 'tis plain there must be a future State, wherein those Patriarchs shall be rewarded by God, and \* consequently another Life after \* See Note

on Mat.22.

28. ¶ The Sadducees being thus filenced; one of the Pharifees, who was a Scribe or Expounder of the Law, having heard Fosis talk with the Sadducees and confute them, thought that he could put a harder Question to Fosis than they had done; and he asked him, saying; Which is the first and principal of all God's Commandments? And, Which is the chief and most necessary Part of the Law; the Ceremonial, or the Moral?

29 & 30. Jesus said: The principal and most necessary Commandments in the whole Law of God, are these Two: First, that we acknowledge and worship the true God, and Him only; and that we serve and obey him, sincerely and affectionately, entirely and constantly, with all Readiness, Chearfulness and Vigour.

31. And Secondly, that we deal with all Men as we defire they should deal with us, with all Justice, Equity, and Charity. These Moral Prescepts, said Jesus, are the principal and most necessary Part of God's

Law;

35.

Law; and there are no positive Institutions, of equal Obligation with them.

32 & 33. At this Answer, the Scribe, who at his first putting the \* Mat. 22. Question came (as \* it seems) with a Design to tempt or ensure Jesus, being now convinced of Jesus's Wisdom and Integrity, replied: Truly, Master, you have given a wife and good Answer: For affuredly to worthip the one only true God, and to obey him with all Sincerity, Chearfulness and Constancy; and to observe in all our Dealings with Men, exact Justice, Equity, and Charity; is a more indifpensable Duty, and a more acceptable Service, than all the Offerings and Sacrifices in the World.

34. Whereupon Fesus, observing that the Man took his Answer rightly, and applied it wifely; faid unto him: You do not want much, of being a true and perfect Christian; Keep and perfift in this Disposition of Mind; and you are well fitted to receive the Gospel, to be a true Member of the Church of God on Earth, and of his Kingdom hereafter in Heaven.

35. ¶ Now Fesus having put to filence both the Pharifees and Sadducees upon all the Questions which they had proposed to Him, He on the contrary proposed a Question to Them, as he continued teaching in the temple; And he asked them, faying: Your Doctors and Expounders of the Law tell you, that Christ, or the Messiah, must be the Son of David; How is this confiftent with other commandment greater than thefe.

32 And the scribe faid unto him, Well Master, thou haft faid the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the foul, and with all thestrength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all wholeburnt offerings and facrifices.

34 And when Jefus faw that he anfwered difcreetly, he faid unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

35 ¶ And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How fay the scribes that Christ is the fon of David,

d-

an

be

ell

aft

or

d,

0-

ve

:he

all

ıg,

the

all

to

ore

ole-

and

Je-

an-

,he

iou

the

od.

fter

im

efus

aid,

in

fay

that

1 of

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he then his fon? And the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he faid unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long cloathing, and love falutations in the market-places,

39 And the chief feats in the Synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts.

40 Which devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

what ye read in the Scripture, Pfalm

36. For there David, who was an inspired Person, speaketh thus: The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my Right hand, till I make thine Enemies thy Foot-stool: And this ye all acknowledge to be spoken of the Messiah.

37. Now therefore if David thus calleth the Messiah his Lord, how can the Messiah be his Son? Can the same Person be both his Superior and Inserior? To this Question, the Scribes and Pharisees, not knowing that Christ was more than a meer Man, and that in his Divine Nature he was superior to David, though inserior in his Humane; were not able to make any Answer. But the common People were pleased to see Jesus too hard for their proud Teachers, and they hearkned to his Doctrine with Attention and Gladness.

38, & 39. ¶. At that time Jesus faid to his Disciples and to all the People. Beware of the Hypocrisie of the Scribes and Pharisees; who affect to walk in long Garments, as wise and grave Teachers of the People; and love to be saluted with great Respect in the Streets, as Rabbies or Heads of Sects; and strive to have the uppermost Seats both in Religious Assemblies and at all publick Entertainments, as Men of the greatest

Worth and Dignity.

40. Beware, I fay, of the Hypocrific of these Men. For under all their Pretences of extraordinary Piety, they are secretly guilty of Fraud, Oppression, Extortion and Rapine; And 'tis only to cover these vile Practices the better, that they make such H a great

For

a great outward Show of Devotion. Wherefore they shall receive double Punishment at the Hands of God.

41. T. After this, Fefus fitting in the Court of the Temple, over-against the Treasury, look'd upon the People as they cast in their Free-will-offerings into the Cheft for pious and charitable And many rich Men gave very Ufes. large Sums.

42. And among the rest there came a poor Widow-woman, and put in Two fmall Pieces of Money, making

the Value of a Farthing.

43. Which when Fesus observed; he called his Disciples to him, and faid: Affuredly I tell you, this poor Woman has done a greater Act of Piety and Charity, than any of the rich Men whom you faw cast in such a great deal of Money.

44. For they gave only a fmall Proportion out of their great Estates: But she in the Zeal of her Heart has put in her whole Stock. And God judges of Mens Actions, not by the Measure of the outward Work, hut by the inward Disposition and Affection of the Heart.

41 And Jefus fat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treafury: and many that were rich cast in much.

And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called unto him his disciples, and faith unto them, Verily I fay unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasu-

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAP.

### CHAP. XIII.

Jesus foretels the Destruction of Jerusalem, and warns all Men to watch, that they may not be surprized with Judgment Temporal or Eternal.

ND as he wentout of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.

re

r

ie

 $\mathbf{b}$ 

1-

n-

y

is

th

en

ve

u-

lid

a-

he

ast

ad,

P.

2 And Jefus anfwering faid unto him, Seeftthouthefe great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he fat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John and Andrew asked him privately.

4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus anfwering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you. 1. A Fter this, as Jesus was going out of the Temple, his Disciples defired him to observe the Materials and the Workmanship of it, thinking that he would admire the Magnificence and Strength of the Building.

2. But Jesus said: Do ye wonder at the Beauty and Stateliness of this Structure, as if it were to last for ever? I tell you, it shall shortly be overthrown with such a terrible and utter Desolation, that there shall not be left so much as the Ruins of a Wall, or any Foot-steps of so great a Fabrick.

3. Then they went to the Mount of Olives; and as Fesus sat there upon the Hill, in a Place where he had a full View of the City and Temple, some of his Disciples came to him privately, and asked him, saying:

4. When shall all those strange Revolutions, that you have so often told us of, come to pass? When shall the *fewish* Government and Polity be dissolved, and the Kingdom of the *Messiah* be established? And by what Signs shall we be able to discern, when all these Things shall be ready to be accomplished?

5. Jesus \* answered: Beware that \* See Pano one impose upon you with false raphr. on Notions concerning the Kingdom of Mat. 24. 4.

H<sub>2</sub> th

the Messiah, and the Manner of its Establishment.

6. For there shall arise several Impostors, who will each profess himfelf to be the Messiah, and pretend to be fent by God to deliver the Fews from the Power of the Romans, and to fet up an Earthly Kingdom in Fudea; and these Deceivers shall seduce many, to the Destruction both of themselves and their Followers. be not ye deceived by them; neither give any heed at all to any Reports of Christ's Appearing here or there to deliver his People the Fews: For fo far will Christ be from appearing to fet up a Temporal Dominion amongst them, that on the contrary the real Establishment of his Kingdom will begin with the Destruction of their City and Nation.

7. When therefore ye shall hear Reports of Wars and Tumults, of Seditions and Insurrections, and great Consussion; be not surprized or terrified at the News of these Calamities: For these things must of Necessity happen, before the Destruction of Ferusalem, and in order to it. [And in like manner before the End of the World, whereof this Desolation of the Jews will

be a fit Type.

8. For there shall be Divisions and Civil Wars, and great Commotions in several Parts of the Land: And these Calamities shall be accompanied with Scarcity and Famine, with strange Fears and Terrors: All which Things shall be the Fore-runners and the Beginning of that great Destruction, which shall end in the Dissolution of the Jewish State and Government.

6 For many shall come in my name, faying, I am Christ, and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for fuch things must needs be; but the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrows.

St. MARK.

9 ¶ Buttake heed to your felves: for they shall deliver you up to councels; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for mysake, for a testimony against them.

no And the gofpel must first be published among all nations.

final lead you, and deliver youup, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall

9. In the mean time be ye careful in the midst of these Calamities to preserve your Integrity, and not to be moved by any Discouragements from maintaining the Profession of the Truth. For Men will hate and perfecute you for the fake of my Religion: And ye shall not only be examined before the Fewish Councils, and beaten unjustly in their publick Assemblies; but ye shall moreover be brought in Judgment even before Heathen Princes and Governours, that the Doctrine of true Religion may have an Opportunity of being declared and vindicated before Them also.

10. And by this Means the Gofpel shall be published, not only through all *fudæa*, but it shall begin to be established even among the Gentiles also, before the final Dissolution of the Jewish Government and Re-

ligion.

have foretold you) and profecuted before Rulers and Magistrates for the Sake of my Religion, be not solicitous how to make your Defence, neither study beforehand how to plead your own Cause with any advantagious Representations of Humane Eloquence: For your Doctrine shall be a sufficient Vindication of it self, and your Works shall be an abundant Evidence of your Commission; so that not so much you your selves, as God himself shall plead for you.

12. Only ye must expect that the Persecution raised against you upon my Account, will be very barbarous and unnatural. For to such a Height will the Malice of incorrigibly vicious Men arise, and so irreconcilably will

H<sub>3</sub> they

But

ye

nd

rs,

ed:

ust

he

t.

hall

ion,

inft nere

kes

and

ines

hefe

ings

to death.

rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put

12 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names fake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the fame shall be fa-

they hate that Doctrine which cannot be confiftent with their Superstitions and their Lusts, that they will break through all the Obligations even of natural Affection to oppose it; And not only Strangers, but even the very nearest Relations shall upon this account perfecute one another, and betray one another to Death.

13. And indeed ye will find the Generality of Men fet themselves obstinately against you, to oppose and discourage you. But be not terrified at this; much less driven to Despair. For whofoever, notwithstanding all the Perfecutions and Discouragements he may meet with, shall continue stedfast in the Profession and Practice of the Truth; shall for his present Reward be directed by the special Providence of God to escape that Temporal Destruction which is coming upon the Fews, and in the End shall inherit eternal Life.

14. And now as to the which shall immediately precede this total Desolation of Judea: ye shall see Ferusalem besieged by the Roman Army, (according to Daniel's Prophecy, which let him that readeth, confider and understand;) then know that the final Destruction of the Jewish Nation is just at hand. And accordingly, whoever is in the open Country, let him flee immediately to the Mountains.

15, & 16. And because the Ruin of the Country will be very fuddain, therefore let your Flight be as speedy as possible. Let no Man tarry in hopes of faving his Goods, but leave all Things behind him, and flee every one for his Life, as Lot did out of

14 ¶ But when ye shall fee the abomination of defolation, spoken of by Daniprophet, the standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the housetops, not go down into the house, neither enter therein ? to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field not da tic no gi tic

cr

tin

be

not

for

ga

tha

and

giv day

no

1

tl 11 n fa

e h d

not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with child, and to them that give fuck in those days.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortned those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortned the days.

21 And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, he is there: believe him not. Sodom, without fo much as looking back.

17. Miferable at that Time will be the Cafe of those, who through Sickness or any other natural or accidental Impediment, shall be hindred from fleeing immediately and swiftly.

18. Pray therefore that God would be pleafed in his good Providence fo to dispose and order the Circumstances of Things, that neither want of Health, nor the Unseasonableness of the Time, nor any other Accident may prevent or retard your Flight.

19. For verily the Afflictions and Calamities, the Fears and Terrors, the Confusion and Anguish that shall fall upon Men at that Time, when Plagues and miserable Famine, when Distress from the Enemy abroad, and Misunderstandings and Quarrels, Tumults and horrid Cruelties from seditious Persons at home, shall all meet together; will be greater than

or shall ever happen after.

20. So that if these Calamities were to be as lasting, as they will be sharp and severe, no Man could possibly escape: But for the Sake of good and sincere Men, whom God designs to deliver and make eminent Members of his Church, the Time of this Affliction shall be shortned.

ever happened to any Nation before,

21. Now in the Time of these Distresses, if there be any Reports spread abroad by weak or designing Men, that Christ appears in this or the other Place, in order to deliver the Jews, and to rescue them from the Power of the Romans; regard it not.

H 4 22. For,

22. For, to compleat the just Punishment of the unbelieving Jews, there shall arise great Impostors and Deceivers; some of which shall pretend to be Prophers and holy Men, feducing ignorant Persons to follow them to their own Destruction: And others shall pretend to be the Messiah, sent by God to deliver his People; and they shall work strange Cheats and lying Wonders, fo as to delude not only the unbelieving Fews, but, if it were possible, even sincere Christians also.

23. Take heed therefore, and be not led away by any of these Deceivers; Remember, that I have given you Warning of them beforehand.

24 & 25. Thus have I given you an Account of the State of Things, and of the Signs which shall precede the Destruction of Ferusalem. The End of all which Calamities shall be, that the † whole Nation, Government, Polity and Religion of the Fews shall be totally diffolved.

26 & 27. And then it shall appear plainly, that Jesus was indeed the Messiah, by this wonderful Destruction of those who rejected his Gospel. After which he shall fend forth his Ministers through all Parts of the World, and they shall preach with great and glorious Success, converting Men by the Excellency of

false For Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to feduce, if it were poffible, even the elect,

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

24 9 But in those days, after that tribulation, the fun shall be darkned, and the moon shall not give her light.

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall

be shaken.

26 And then shall they fee the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he fend his angels, and shall gather to-

gether

<sup>+</sup>ο hai σκοτισθήσεται, &c. 'Tis well known how usual these lofty Figures are in all the Eastern Languages; and Dr. Lightfoot well observes out of the Talmud, that the Fews used these very Phrases in describing the Ruin even of a single Family.

gether his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-When her tree: branch is yet tender and putteth forth leaves, ye know that fummer is near:

è

n

11

rs

it

ill

of

ne

at

all

0-

er

ıal r.

ed a

29 So ye in like when ye manner, shall see these things cometo país, know, that it is nigh, even at the door.

30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pais, till all these things bedone.

their Doctrine and the Greatness of their Works, and shall gather together fincere and good Men not only of the Tews, but also out of all the Nations of the Gentiles, into the Communion and Profession of his (And in like manner true Religion. at the End of the World, of which the Destruction of Jerusalem is a proper Tipe; after many strange Revolutions and great Calamities and Distresses, Christ shall appear in the Clouds of Heaven, with Power and great Glory, to judge Mankind; and he shall by the Ministry of his Angels gather out of all Parts of the World his true and sincere Servants, who have believed God and obeyed his Commandments, to fave and reward them; but the Wicked he shall destroy, finally and for ever.)

28 & 29. And now observe this Similitude, which I am about to tell you. As, when you fee the Trees shoot forth their tender Buds and begin to be covered with Leaves, ye know certainly that Summer is coming on: So, when ye shall see these many Signs, which I have foretold you, come to pass; know that That great Destruction of the Jewish Nation, whereby the Kingdom of the Messiah shall be established upon Earth, approaches very near.

30. Assuredly I tell you, all these Things shall be fulfilled in this prefent Age, even in the Sight of some who are now alive, and shall be Eye-

witnesses of them.

31. † And doubt not but every Tittle of what I have told you, shall punctually come to pass: For God hath irreversibly determined to do all these Things; and sooner may Heaven and Earth perish, than any one of my Words fail of being accomplished.

when this great Defolation shall happen, [and in like manner, when the last fudgment shall be,] God has never revealed that, neither to Man nor Angel, nay, nor to me my self. But as Daniel prophesied of it at a Distance, without determining exactly when it should come to pass; so I, though I tell you more clearly and distinctly the Fore-runners and Signs and Circumstances of it, yet neither bave I Commission to declare the exact Time when it shall be.

33. Be careful therefore, and watchful, and diligent; that ye may be always ready, and in a holy and pious Disposition worthy of Deliverance, when ever your Lord shall appear: Because ye know not the Time when this great Destruction [or when Death and Judgment] will come.

34. For as a Man travelling into a far Country, leaves his Goods in charge with his Servants, and appoints to every one his particular Bu-

31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey who

<sup>†</sup> Some have conjectured, and indeed very ingeniously, that this Verse is a Transition from the Description of the Destruction of ferusalem, to that of the Day of Judgment. And then it must be thus paraphrased: What I have told you about the Destruction of Jerusalem, shall all be fulfilled in the present Age: But I have a greater Thing to declare to you, and that is the End of the World and the General fudgment, which shall also as certainly come to pass; but the Time when it shall be, is not revealed.

who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest coming fuddenly, he find you sleeping.

37 And what I fay unto you, I fay unto all, Watch.

at

n st on ve ld to

finess, wherein he expects to find them diligently employed at what time soever he shall think fit to return: So Christ revealing the Will of God to Men, has declared to every one his particular Duty, wherein he expects to find them exercised, whenever he shall please to call them to an Account.

35 & 36. Wherefore as Servants thus entrusted with their Master's Business, ought to be very careful, that at what time soever their Master comes home, whether early or late, in the Morning or at Night, he may find them not lazy and negligent, but diligent and employed in their Business: So ought ye to be careful, that whensoever Christ shall come, either in any Temporal or in the Final Judgment, he may not surprize you viciously or foolishly employed, but wisely and patiently doing your Duty.

37. And what I now fay unto you my prefent Disciples, I would be understood to speak to all Men in all Ages: That they may prepare themselves by a holy and pious Conversation, so as never to be surprized in a sinful State by Death and Judgment.

ment.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. XIV.

The Jews conspire to apprehend Jesus, v. 1. The Occasion of Judas's resolving to betray him, v. 3. Jesus eats the Passover with his Disciples, and foretels who should betray him, v. 12. Providence brings Good out of the evil Actions of bad Men, v. 21. Jesus institutes the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, v. 22. Foretels Peter's Denial, v. 27. His Agony, v. 32. He is betrayed by Judas, v. 43. and apprehended, v. 46. and tried by the High-Priest, v. 53. and condemned, v. 64. Peter's Denial, v. 66. and Repentance, v. 72.

Two Days before the Feast of the Passover. About which time the chief Priests and Teachers of the Jews, having before resolved to destroy Jesus, held a Consultation which way they might apprehend him privately, so that the People, who admired his Doctrine and Miracles, might not have an Opportunity of rescuing him.

2. In this Confultation, there were feveral who advised, not to apprehend \( \overline{F}\) fus at all at a Time of such general Concourse as the Passover; lest, when they had seized him though never so privately, the People should afterwards come together and rescue him. But \( \overline{F}\) udas offering to betray him into their Hands, the Opinion of others to take that Opportunity of apprehending him forthwith, prevailed.

3. Now the immediate Occasion of Judas's offering to betray him,

days, was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes fought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they faid, not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

3 ¶ And being in Bethany, in the house house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster-box of ointment of spikenard, very precious; and she brake the box, and poured it on his head.

4 And there were fome that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of ointment made?

5 For it might have been fold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

s e e

in

he

6 And Jefus faid, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For yehave the poor with you always, and whenfoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.

8 She hath done what fhe could: fhe is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

was this. Jefus having been \* fome Days before at Bethany, at the House of one Simon who had been cured of the Leprosie; there came a Woman behind him, as he was sitting at Meat, and poured upon his Head a Pot of very precious Ointment, and anointed him therewith.

4 & 5. Whereupon † Judas who † See Note was of a covetous Disposition, and on Mat. 26. thought this Prodigality of the Wo-8. man deserved a Rebuke, said in discontent; Wherefore was all this good Ointment suffered to be wasted, which might have been sold for a great deal of Money, enough to have relieved several poor People?

6. But Jesus, knowing his Heart, and that he spake this not out of Charity, but Covetousness, replyed: Nay, do not disturb the Woman, who has done a very good Work in testifying her Respect, and paying this last Honour to me before my Death.

7. For, as to what you fay about the Poor; you have them always with you, and you may relieve them whenever you please: But I have only a very little while to continue among you; fo that you need not grudge what is spent upon me in this short time.

8. 'Tis but a very little while, I fay, that I shall tarry with you! For within Six or Seven Days I shall be dead and buried: And therefore there

<sup>\*</sup> Not, Two Days before the Passover, as if this were to be connected with Ver. 1. but about a Week before, as in John 12. 1. And thus this History, (the Time whereof is much perplexed by Dr. Lightfoot and some others,) may well be the same with that in John 12. as the other Circumstances of it plainly show it to be.

there is one good Thing more, which you are not aware of, that this Woman has done for me: She has anointed my Body beforehand against the Burial, and been directed by Providence to do that to me yet alive, which she would have defired, and you would eafily have allowed her to have done to me when dead.

9. Assuredly I tell you, there is no Part of the World where my Hiftory shall be related, and my Doctrine preached; but this Thing, which this Woman has now done, shall be mentioned also, for the Commendation of her Piety, and the Remem-

brance of her Zeal.

10. At this answer Judas was much offended: So that partly out of Discontent, and partly through Covetousness, he resolved to betray Fesus into the Hands of his Enemies; and accordingly he went foon after to the chief Priests, who he knew were confulting how to apprehend Fesus, and offered for a Sum of Money to deliver him into their Power.

11. This Offer those malicious Fews joyfully embraced; and they agreed with Judas for Thirty Pieces of Silver; and from that Instant Judas waited only for a convenient Opportunity, to betray him privately in-

to their Hands.

12. Now on the first Day of unleavened Bread, before the Evening which began the Day wherein the Passover was to be eaten, the Disciples asked Fesus, where he would have them make Preparation for his Eating the Pasiover.

13. Fesus said, Go Two of you into the City, and as foon as ye are

9 Verily I fay unto you, Wherefoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 ¶ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto

them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he fought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the paffover, his disciples said untohim, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the pasfover?

13 And he fendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith

unto

unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wherefoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The master saith, where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?

ł

e

1

a

S

e

0

,

0

n

y

m

ne

ne

ly

:ft

ed

ey

er,

n-

ilt

nd

ou

af-

nd-

his

ith ato 15 And he will fhew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his difciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had faid unto them: and they made ready the paffover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 And as they fat, and did eat, Jefus faid, Verily I fay unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me

19 And they began to be forrowful, and to fay unto him one by one, Is it I? and another faid, Is it I?

20 And he anfwered and faid unto them, It is one of

entred in, ye shall see a Man in the Street carrying a Pitcher of Water; follow him.

14. And when ye come to the House where the Man goes in, go ye in with him, and say to the Master of the House: Thus saith our Master; Where is the Guests Chamber, where I shall eat the Passover with my Disciples?

15. And the Providence of God will fo dispose Things, that without any farther Inquiry the Man will immediately conduct you to a large upper Room ready furnished; there prepare

the Passover against our coming.

16. Accordingly Two of the Difciples, viz. Peter and John, went into the City, and found every Thing succeed exactly as Jesus had foretold them; and they made all Things ready for his eating the Passover.

17. And at Night Jesus came, and sat down with his Twelve Dif-

ciples.

18. And as they were eating, Fefus faid; Verily One of you Twelve, even One that now eateth at the Table with me, will most ungratefully betray me into the Hands of my Perfecutors.

19. At this they all, except Judas, knowing their Innocence, yet fearful of their own Weakness, and desirous to be freed from Suspicion by Jesus's express Declaration, urged with great Solicitousness to know who it should be: And every one said; Lord, I hope 'tis not I, that shall be guilty of so horrid Crime.

20. But Fesus replied again: It is one of you Twelve; nay, One that sits very near me, eating of the

fame Mess, and dipping in the same Dish with me.

21. And I indeed must be delivered over into the Power of wicked Men, to be crucified and flain. For thus God has decreed, and the Prophets have foretold, that I should fuffer and die for the Salvation of But woe be to that Man, Mankind. through whose Perfidiousness I shall be betrayed to fuffer these Things. For though the infinite Wisdom of Divine Providence wonderfully overrules the malicious Actions of the worst Men, to bring about wise, just, and good Designs; yet the Baseness and Treachery of those who do and intend Evil, is not at all the less worthy Wherefore dreadful of Punishment. shall be the Punishment of him that betrays me; fo that it had been better for him if he had never been born, or had quickly perished by some untimely Death.

\* ET DIOVTEN Aorist;

At the \* Conclusion of 22. may be the this Supper, Jefus took Bread, and when he had given Thanks, he brake when they it, and gave it to his Disciples, badeaten. faying; Take, eat: And as the Paffover has been hitherto a perpetual Commemoration of the Fews Deliverance out of Egypt; fo from henceforward let your eating this Sacramental Bread, be a continual Remembrance of my Body being broken for

23. In like manner he took the Cup, and when he had given Thanks, he gave it to them, faying, Drink ye

all of this:

24. And let your drinking this Sacramental Wine, be from henceforward a perpetual Commemoration of

thetwelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

The Son of 2 I man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom the Son of manis betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been born.

22 ¶ And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and bleffed, and brake it, and gave to them, and faid, Take eat: this is my body.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he faid unto them', This is my blood of the new testament, which is fhed for many.

25 Verily

e

f ı, of

it

e

y -

it

ne

n,

iev

ook

led,

and

and

this

ook

hen

nks,

em:

rank

faid

his is

new

ich is

**Terily** 

25 Verily I fay unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 And when they had fung an hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives.

27 And Jesus faith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am rifen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 But Peter faid unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And Jesus faith unto him, Verily I fay unto thee, that this day, even in this night before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

my Blood shed, and of the new Covenant of the Gospel thereby established, for the Salvation of Sin-

25. For after this I will have the Jewish \* Passover no longer continu- \* Luk. 22. ed; But the Things, of which That 16. and the like Institutions were only faint Representations, shall from this Time begin to be accomplished in the Kingdom of the Messias.

26. Then, having fung an Hymn, according to the usual Custom; they role up, and went out towards the

Mount of Olives.

27. And as they were going, Jus faid unto his Disciples: The Time of my Suffering is come; and ye will be so afraid and discouraged at the Things which ye shall see befal me, that this very Night ye shall all forfake me and flee; fo that this Pro-phecy will exactly be accomplished in me, (Zech. 13. 7.) Smite the Shepherd, and the Sheep shall be scattered.

28. But do not utterly despair. For though the Jews shall prevail so far, as even to take away my Life; yet I will rife again from the Dead,

and appear to you in Galilee.

29. Hereupon Peter, full of Courage, and too confident of his own Strength, replied: Lord, though all the rest of your Disciples should be afraid and forfake you, yet I never would leave you in any Danger whatfoever.

30. Jesus said, Are you so consident,
Peter? Verily I tell you, that even
This Night, before \* Three a Clock \* See Note in the Morning, you will thrice deny on Mat. that ever you knew me, 26. 34. 31 But

31. But the more Jesus forewarned him of his Weakness, with so much the greater Eagerness and Assurance did Peter again and again protest, that nothing should ever make him asraid to own and confess Jesus, no not though it should cost him his Life. And the same also said the rest of the

Disciples.

came to a Place called Gethsemane, at the Foot of the Mount of Olives, Jesus left Eight of his Disciples there, bidding them tarry till he came back. And going on a little further with only Peter, James, and John, that they who had been Witnesses of his glorious Transfiguration, might be Witnesses also of his lowest Humiliation and Passion; he began, in the Presence of these Three Disciples, to be in a great Consternation and Anguish of Mind.

34. And he faid unto them; My Mind is in a great Agony, even like the Agony of Death: Tarry ye here and watch, while I retire a little, to

pray.

35. Then leaving these also behind him, he went on a little further alone; and kneeling down on the Ground, he prayed against his approaching Passion and Death, say-

ing:

36. O Almighty Father, if in thy infinite Wisdom thou sawest it sit; and that thy Glory and the Salvation of Men could be equally promoted without my Suffering this painful and ignominious Death, I could even defire that I might escape it: But this is only the first Apprehension that Human Nature has of Death; and

31 But he fpake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewisealso said they all.

32 And they came to a place whichwas named Gethsemane: and he faith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

33 Andhetaketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be fore amazed, and to be very heavy,

34 And faith unto them, My foul is exceeding forrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.

36 And he faid, Abba, Father, All things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them fleeping, and faith unto Peter, Simon, fleepeft thou? couldft not thou watch one hour?

38 Watch ye and pray, left ye enter into temptation: the fpirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

is

e,

h

d

n,

re

oe

to

is

V-

ar-

nd

nt

nd

ad,

fit

he

ais

id,

All

ble

2-

om

eis,

but

170

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and fpake the fame words.

40 And when he returned, he found them afleep again, (for their eyes were heavy) neither wift they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and faith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your reft: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of finners.

I fubmit my felf wholly to thy Divine Will and Pleafure.

37. Then coming back to his Difciples, he found them afleep; For it was late in the Night, and they were very drowfie and forrowful. And he faid to *Peter*; Are you afleep, Simon? Could you undertake just now to die for my take, and can you not now watch with me in my Agony One Hour?

38. Watch and Pray, that God may deliver you from the Dangers, to which ye are going to be exposed. I know your Minds are fincere, and your Dispositions good; but the natural Wants and Infirmities of the Body will betray you into Danger, if the Resolutions of your Minds be not strong enough to overcome them in Time of Peril and Necessity.

39. Again, Fesus retired from his Disciples a second time, and prayed after the same Manner, submitting himself wholly to the divine Will.

40. And when he came back, he found them afleep again. For they could not keep themselves awake; and they understood not what he meant, nor knew what Answer to make him.

41. Again, Jesus withdrew from them the Third time, and prayed after the same Manner: And when he returned, he said to the Disciples,

\* Are ye yet overcome with Sleep\* See Note and Drowfines? Nay, ye may ev'n on Mat. fleep on now; I have overcome my 26. 45. Agony, and 'tis too late for your watching to be any Comfort or Affistance to me now. The Time of my Suffering is come, and I am just going to be betrayed into the Hands of those who seek my Life.

I 2 42 Come

42. Come, rife, let us be going: The Traitor, that comes to appre-

hend me, is just upon us.

43. Scarcely had Jesus said these Words, when suddenly Judas appeared, with a great Number of Officers and Servants sollowing him, armed with Swords and Clubs; whom the chief Priests and Rulers of the Jews had sent to apprehend Jesus in this his private Retirement, Judas having undertaken to conduct them.

44. Now because the Officers did not know Fsus's Face, and it was also Night; Fudas agreed to give them this Token, that when they saw him go up to any one and salute him with a Kiss, they should thereby know that this was Fesus, and be sure to lay hold on him immediately, and keep him from escaping.

45. As foon therefore as Judas faw Jesus, he went directly to him, and faluted him with much seeming Re-

fpect, and kiffed him.

46. Whereupon the Officers, according to the appointed Signal, prefently apprehended him and held him fast.

47. Which when the Disciples faw, they were affrighted and amazed. But *Peter*, always couragious and bolder than the rest, drew his Sword, and simote one of the High Priests Servants, and wounded him on the Head.

48. But Jessis healed the Man's Wound, and having rebuked Peter for his indiscreet Zeal, he expostulated mildly with those who apprehended him, saying: Why come ye out at this time of Night, armed and

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ And immediately, while he yet fpake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with fwords and flaves, from the chief priefts, and the fcribes, and the elders.

44 And he that betrayed him had given them a token, faying, Whomfoever I shall kifs, the same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And affoon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and faith, Mafter, master; and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a fword, and smote a fervant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jefus anfwered and faid unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and with staves, to take me?

46 I

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forfook him, and fled.

IS

)-

0

1-

d

y

n

n.

of

y,

d,

nt

ft,

r.

ın-

ın-

ye

nst

rds

to

I

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him,

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 9 And they led Jesus away to the high priest: with him were aftembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the icribes.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he fat with the fervants, and warmprepared to feize me by Violence; as if ye were to apprehend fome Robber, that would defend himself, and make great Relistance?

49 Did not I use to sit constantly in the Temple, teaching the People publickly and at Noon-day? where, if I had been guilty of any Crime, ye might have laid hold on me whenever you pleafed? What need then was there for all this Force and Secrefie to apprehend me? But now is the Time which the Wisdom of God has appointed, and which the Scriptures of the Prophets have foretold that I should suffer in; and therefore am I delivered into your Hands.

50. Then all the Disciples, seeing there was no Remedy, and that Fefus would not fuffer them to endeavour to rescue him, forfook him and

fled.

51, & 52. Among whom was one, a young Man; who having only a loofe Cloth about his naked Body; and the Officers, who suspected him to be a Disciple of Fesus, laying hold of the Cloth to apprehend him; he let go the Cloth, and fled away naked.

53. ¶. Fesus therefore being thus fecured, and his Disciples dispersed; he was led away to Caiaphas the High Priest's House, where all the Chief Priests, and Elders, and Teachers of the Jews were ready assembled to try him.

54. And as the Officers were carrying him, Peter followed at a diftance, and went in after them into the high Priest's House, and sat down as a Stranger among the Servants at

13.

the Fire; waiting to fee what the E-vent of this Thing would be.

having gotten Fesus in their Power, and being beforehand resolved to put him to Death; that they might seem to do That with some Appearance of Justice, which however they were resolved in any wise to do, they used all possible Means to procure Persons to witness such Things against him as might reach his Life, but they could not.

56. For though many came in to witness against him, yet so frivolous and trisling were the Things they testified, that even these unjust Judges themselves, who had before his Trial resolved to condemn him, could not find therein \* sufficient Pretence to give Sentence against him.

57, & 58. At last, after several others, there came in some, who maliciously misrepresenting and misinterpreting some Words of his which they did not understand, witnessed that they heard him say, He could pull down the Temple made with Hands, and within Three Days build another made without Hands.

59. But neither did this feem † a fufficient Pretence to put him to Death.

60. Then the High Priest stood up himself, and asked fesus, saying: Have you nothing to plead for your self? What say you to the Things these Men witness against you?

61. But Jefus, knowing their Injustice, and that they watched only to lay hold of his Words, answered nothing. Then the High Priest spake again, and asked him with an Adjustic

ed himselfat the fire.

55 And the chief priests, and all the council fought for witness against Jefus to put him to death; and found none.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

57 And there are rose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,

58 We heard him fay, I will deftroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither fo did their witness agree together.

60 And the high prieft flood up in the mids, and asked Jefus, faying, Anfwerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the highpriestaskedhim

and

\* ioa:

ין יסח.

and faid unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blefsed?

62 And Jefus faid, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes and faith, What need we any further witness?

64 Ye have heard the blafphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

d

(s

n

y

ıs,

ee

1-

ıt

o

1--

h

n

d

1-

)-

it

t-

is

ed ie

m

d

65 And fome began to spit on him, and to coverhisface, and to buffet him, and to fay unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

66 ¶ Andas Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high prieft.

67 And when she faw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said,

ration, faying: Tell me the Truth, in the Prefence of God; Art thou the Christ, the Son of the most High God?

62. To this Jesus answered; I am: And ye your selves shall see convincing Evidences of my being so; in the great and dreadful Destruction which I will speedily send upon the unbelieving Jews; in the quick and wonderful Progress that my Religion shall make over the Earth; and finally, in my glorious Appearing to judge the World.

63. When the High Priest heard this, he rent his Cloaths in great Indignation, and said unto the Council; What need we trouble our selves to seek for any more Witnesses?

64. Ye your felves are Witnesses, and this whole Assembly are Witnesses, that he hath spoken manifest and notorious Blasphemy; What think ye of it? And they all agreed, that for assuming to himself to be the Messah, he deserved to be put to Death.

65. Then the Servants prefently fell upon him, as a Person already condemned; offering all manner of Rudeness and Indignities to him; beating him with their Hands, spiting upon his Face, blinding him, and then striking him, and bidding him, since he pretended to be a Prophet, divine who it was that struck him.

66, & 67. ¶. In the mean time, Peter fat at the lower End of the Room among the Servants, expecting with Fear the Event of Jesus's Trial. Where, as he was warming himself at the Fire, one of the High I 4 Priest's

34.

Prieft's Maids looking earnestly upon him, faid; I believe you were one of the Followers of Fesus of Nazareth.

68. But Peter utterly denied it, faying: I know not what you mean. And going out into the Porch, he heard the Cock crow for Midnight.

69. A while after, another Maid-Servant observing him, faid to the Standers-by; Surely this Man was one of Fesus's Followers. But Peter positively denied it the second time.

70. Again, after fome time, those that stood by, urged Peter further, faying: Most certainly you are one of this Man's Disciples; for your very Speech sheweth that you are a Galilæan.

71. But Peter, through Anger and Fear now almost beside himself, denied it the third time with Imprecations and Oaths, faying: I know nothing of the Man, neither had I ever any thing to do with him.

72. And presently after, he heard \* See Note the Cock crow for \* Three a Clock on Mat.26. in the Morning. Whereupon, calling to mind the Warning which Fesus had given him, That before \* Three in the Morning, he should thrice deny him, he went out, and, for grief at his own Weakness and Fearfulness, wept bitterly.

And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, faying, I know not, neither understand I what thou fayest. And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.

69 And a maid faw him again, and began to fay to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by faid again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them . for thou art a Galilean, thy fpeech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to Iwear, Saying, know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Iefus faid unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shaltdeny methrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XV.

Jesus is brought before Pilate, v. 1. Pilate, contrary to his own Judgment, delivers him, upon the clamorous and tumultuous Demand of the Jews, to be crucified, v. 15. He is mocked and abused by the Soldiers, v. 16. and crucified, v. 22. and derided by the Jews, v. 29. Prodigies happen at his Death, v. 33. of which many were Witnesses, v. 39. Jesus buried by Joseph of Arimathea, v. 42.

ND straightway in the morning the chief priests held a confultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

- 2 And Pilate asked him, Artthouthe king of the Jews? and he answering faid unto him, Thou sayest it.
- 3 And the chief priefts accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

I. NOW the Council of the Chief Priests and Elders of the Jews, having spent the greatest. Part of the Night in examining Jesus; after a short Retirement, met again early in the Morning, to consult how to destroy him; and because they could not of themselves put him to Death, which yet they resolved should be done, they sent him before Pilate, the Roman Governour, and accused him of designing to raise a Sedition and make himself King.

2. Upon this, Pilate asked him, Are you King of the Jews? Jefus faid: \* Though you understand not \* Joh. 18. the Nature of my Kingdom, and 36 & 37-therefore look upon me as a mean and contemptible Person, yet it is really true that I am a King.

3. In the mean time, the Chief Priests continued accusing him ‡ with ‡ rolla, much Clamour: But Jesus, knowing with many their unreasonable Malice, and that Words. no Vindication of himself could be of any Force with those that had before resolved to condemn him; re-

fuled to give any more Answers.
4. Then



4. Then Pilate spake to him again, saying: Will you make no Defence for your self? Do you not hear how vehemently these Men accuse you?

5. But Jesus still held his Peace, making no Answer at all; so that Pilate greatly wondered what he

meant.

6. However, Pilate perceiving plainly by the whole Management of this Affair, that the Jews Accufation of Jefus was merely malicious and unjust, desired in his Heart to acquit him and set him free. And he thought to have done it upon this Occasion. It was the Custom, for the Roman Governour at the Feast of the Passover, to gratiste the People of the Jews with releasing to them One Prisoner, whom they themselves pleased.

7. Now, befides Jesus, there happened to be at this Time a remarkable Prisoner, called Barabbas; one who had been a notorious Malesactor, and was at this time in Prison for having been at the Head of a great Sedition, wherein much Outrage and Murder

was committed.

8, & 9. When therefore the People came to Pilate, desiring him to release them a Prisoner according to Custom; Pilate, thinking that he had now a fair Opportunity of discharging Jesus, asked them which they would chuse to have released, Jesus or Barabbas? Supposing that they must needs chuse Jesus, rather than such an infamous Malesactor as Barabbas.

ed plainly, that 'twas meerly out of Envy and Malice, and not for any

Chap. XV.

4 And Pilateasked him again, faying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnessagainst thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate mar-

velled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made infurrection with him, who had committed murder in the infurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to defire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate anfwered them, faying, Will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

that the chief prichts had delivered him for envy.)

11 But

ri But the chief priefts moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilateanfwered, and faid again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto himwhom yecall the king of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucifie

him.

T

I

11

it

- 14 Then Pilate faid unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.
- 15 ¶ And fo Pilate willing to content the people, releafed Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jefus, when he had fcourged him, to be crucified.
- 16 And the fouldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

real Crime, that the Chief Priests were so eager to have Fesus put to Death.

II. Neverthless, contrary to Pilate's Expectation; when he had proposed Fesus and Barabbas, the People prevailed upon by the Clamour and Importunity of the Chief Priests, asked to have Barabbas released, and not Fsus.

faid: Why, what would ye have me to do then with this Man, who is accused here of pretending to be your

King?

13. The People, urged and pushed on by the indefatigable Malice of their Chief Priests and Elders, replied; Let him be crucified.

14. Pilate, aftonished at this malicious and obstinate Perverseness, said again: Why, what Evil has this Mandone? I do not see that ye have proved him guilty of any Crime. But the People, now in a Heat and Tumult, cried out the more fiercely; Let him be crucified.

15. Then Pilate, though fatisfied in his own Mind of Fesus's Innocency, yet seeing the Tumult increase so as even to endanger a Sedition, he, in compliance to the Importunity and Clamours of the Fews, yielded to release Barabbas unto them; and having scourged Fesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

16. ¶. Then \* the Soldiers took \* See Note fesus away, and carried him into on Mat. the Prætorium, or Inner-Hall; and 27.27. called their whole Company together, to mock him and make Sport with him.

17. And

17. And because the Crime laid to his Charge, was, that he pretended to be a King; they in Derision put upon him a Purple Cloth for a Robe, and set a Wreath of Thorns upon his Head for a Crown, and gave him a Reed or Cane in his Hand for a Scepter.

18. And they kneeled down to him, and fcoffingly faluted him, faying: Long live the King of the Jews.

19. Then taking the Cane out of his Hand, they struck him upon the Head with it; and spit upon his Face: and abused him with all possible Insulting, Scorn and Contempt.

20. And when they were weary with mocking him, they stripped him of his Kingly Attire, and put his own Cloaths on again, and carried him out of the City with his Cross upon his Shoulders, to be crucified.

they met with one Simon of Cyrene, (the Father of \* Alexander and Rufus,) travelling upon the Road: And because Jesus was faint and not able to carry the Cross any further, or because they suspected Simon to be a Favourer of Jesus, they stopped Him and compelled him to go along with them and carry the Cross.

22. And in this manner they went to the Place, which from the Execution of Malefactors was called Golgotha, that is, the Place of a Skull.

23. And when they were come thither, they in Mockery offered

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

18 And began to falute him, Hail, king of the Jews.

19 And they fmote him on the head with a reed, and did fpit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a fcull.

him to drink, wine mingled

<sup>\*</sup> Men well known at the Time when this Gospel was written,

mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, cafting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superfcription of his accusationwaswritten over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucifie two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which faith, And he was numbred with the transgressors.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and faying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days,

IS.

Jesus \* Vinegar mix'd with Gall, instead of the stupisying Potion of Myrrhed Wine usually given to Malefactors; But he refused to drink it.

24. Then they nailed him to the Cross, having first stripp'd off his Cloaths: Some of which the Soldiers divided among themselves; and for the rest, to prevent tearing them, they cast Lots.

25. Now it was about ‡ Nine a Clock in the Morning, when they

thus crucified Fesus.

26. And they put over his Head, according to the Roman Custom, an Account of his Crime in these Words, THE KING OF THE IEWS.

27. Also they crucified with him Two Robbers; on each Side one, and

Fesus in the Middle.

28. By which Means was fulfilled that Prophecy of Esaiah, Chap. 53. 12. And he was numbred with the

Transgressors.

29. & 30. Furthermore, the People which past by, seeing him hang upon the Cross, shook their Heads and said: Ah, you that pretended to do such mighty Works, see now if you can deliver your self from Death.

31. In

<sup>\*</sup> St. Mark seems here by δίνος ἐσμυρνισμένος to signific the Potion given Jesus in Contempt, instead of the real δίνος ἐσμυρνισμένος.

<sup>‡</sup> Thus were reith fignifies here, according to the Jewish Reckoning. But St. John, writing after the Destruction of the Jews, computes in the Roman Way; and so were setting, John 19. 14. fignifies, not Noon, but Six in the Morning. By which Observation these Places are perfectly reconciled.

- 31. In like manner the Chief Priests and Teachers of the Jews, thinking themselves now absolutely secure of him, said in Derision one to another: You see, he that undertook to be a Saviour of others, cannot save himself.
- 32. He pretended to be the long-expected Messiah, the Prince and Deliverer of Israel: Let him make Proof now of his Power by delivering Himself from this Punishment, and \*\* we will believe on him. One \* of the Robbers also that were crucified with him, upbraided him after the same Manner.
- 33. ¶. Now at Mid-day, when Fesus had hung about Three Hours upon the Cross, there began a miraculous Darkness over all the Land, which lasted till Three in the Afternoon.
- 34. And at Three a Clock, Jesus being in the Agony of Death, cried out aloud, saying: Eloi, Eloi, lama sabaethani; that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Psal. 22. I.
- 35. Which Words, those that flood by, hearing and not understanding, but deceived with the like Sound of different Words, said: He calls upon Elias to come and help him.
- 36. Then one of the Soldiers dipping a Spunge in Vinegar, offered him to drink: \*\* But others faid,

30 Save thy felf, and come down from the crofs.

31 Likewifealfo the chief priefts mocking, faid among themfelves with thefcribes, He faved others, himfelf he cannot fave.

32 Let Chrift the king of Ifrael defeend now from the crofs; that we may fee and believe. And they that were crucified with him reviled him.

33. And when the fixth hour was come, there was darkness over the wholeland, until the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jefus cried out with a loud voice, faying, Eloi, Eloi, lama fabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why haft thou forfaken me?

35 And fome of them that flood by, when they heard it, faid, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a fpunge full

<sup>\*\*</sup> This they faid, not that they defired or would have yielded to any conviction, but meerly by way of infulting.

<sup>\*</sup> See Note on Matt. 26. 8.

\*\* Thus St. Matthew relates this Circumstance, which is here contracted as in an Epitome.

full of vinegar, and put it on areed, and gave him to drink, faying, Let alone; let us fee whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus criedwith a loud voice, and gave up the

Ghost.

1

o

-

es

e

1-

e

2-

ie

y

d

1-

e-

en

as

as

he

he

he

ri-

ud

01,

h-

e-

Лy

hy

en

of

it,

cal-

an,

nge

full

eld-

h is

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which flood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on a far off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Jamestheles, and of Joses, and Salome;

41 Who alfowhen he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministred unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 ¶ And now when the even was come (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counseller, which

Nay, Let him alone, and fee whether Elias will come to deliver him.

37. Prefently after, Jesus crying again with a loud Voice, and commending his Soul into the Hands of

God, expired.

38. Whereupon immediately the Veil which parted the Holy of Holies from the Sanctuary, was rent from the Top to the Bottom; fignifying the Dissolution of the Jewish Dispensation, and the Opening to all Believers an † Entrance into the Holiest, that † Heb. 10. is, into Heaven, by the Blood of Je-19, 20. fus. And many other strange Signs happened at the same time, signifying the great Alterations which God was about to bring to pass in the World.

39. Infomuch that the Roman Captain himself, who was set with his Soldiers to watch Jesus, observing the Manner of his Expiring and the Signs which accompanied his Death, said; Certainly this was some extraordinary Person, if not more than a Man.

40, & 41. Several Women also, who had attended Jesus and supplied him with Necessaries in his Journey through Galilee; as Mary Magdalen, and another Mary (the Mother of James and Joses,) and Salome; with other Women who came up with him to Jerusalem; stood at a Distance, and were Eye-witnesses of all these Things.

42, & 43. ¶. And now, as foon as the Evening was come; because the next Day was the Sabbath whereon no Work might be done; one foseph of Arimathea, a Perfon of Quality and Esteem, who

was

was of a pious Disposition, expecting the Revelation of the Kingdom of God, and in his Heart believed Jefus to be the Messiah: This Man, I say, desiring to preserve the Body of Jefus from being cast out among the Malesactors, came to Pilate early in the Evening, and with great Courage begged that the Body might be delivered to him.

44, & 45. At first Pilate was much surprized with this Petition, and could hardly believe that Jesus was dead so soon: But sending for the Officer who was appointed to watch Jesus, and being satisfied by him that Jesus was really dead, he granted the Body to Joseph.

46. Then Foseph, taking down the Body, wrapped it in a fine Linen Cloth which he had bought, and laid it in a new Sepulchre which he had caused to be cut for himself in a Rock, and stopped the Mouth of the Se-

pulchre with a great Stone.

47. All which was observed by Mary Magdalene and Mary the Mother of Joses; who followed after the Body, and took Notice where it was laid, with a Design to come and Embalm it as soon as the Sabbath was over.

alfo waited for the kingdom of God, came and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jefus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a fepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a ftone unto the door of the fepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Jofes, beheld where he

waslaid.

CHAP.

n

ne

bed ad

le

ne

n-

he

ht

ok

nd

he

m

ch

a

or

ry

la-

0-

he

P.

## CHAP. XVI.

Women coming to anoint the Body, are told by an Angel, that Jesus is risen, v. 1. Jesus himself appears to Mary Magdalene, v. 9. and to Two of the Disciples, v. 12. and to the Eleven, v. 14. He gives them Instructions to Preach, v. 15. and ascends into Heaven, v. 19.

A ND when the fabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

a And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

3 And they faid among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4(And when they looked, they faw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 And entering into the sepulchre, they after the Sabbath, very early, before it was perfect Day-Light; Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, (the Mother of James,) and Salome; having prepared sweet Ointment and Spices, went to the Sepulchre, intending to embalm the Body of Jefus.

3, & 4. And as they were in the Way, they debated among themselves how they should get that great Stone removed, with which they had \* \* Chap. 15. seen Foseph of Arimathea stop the Ver. 47. Mouth of the Sepulchre: But when they came at the Place, they found the Stone, to their great Surprize, rolled away beforehand.

5. Going therefore to enter into the Sepulchre, there appeared unto them an Angel in the Form of a young Man, cloathed with a long 28.

white Garment; \* first sitting without, and then immediately going in and standing with another Angel at the Place where the Body of Fesus had lain. At the Appearance of whom, the Women were greatly affrighted.

6. But the Angel faid unto them; Be not afraid: I know ye come to feek for the Body of Fesus, who was crucified: He is not here, dead, as ye expect; but is rifen again, and alive:

Behold the Place where he lay.

7. And go, tell Peter and the rest of his Disciples, that he is risen from the Dead; and that he will appear to + Ch. 14. them in Galilee, as he foretold them + before his Death.

8. At this News, the Women partly affrighted, and partly furprized with great Joy and Wonder, turned back immediately from the Sepulchre, and ran in great hafte to tell the Disciples, without speaking a Word to any Man whom they met by the Way.

9. And thus the Refurrection of Christ was first declared by a Vifion of Angels. But as the Women were going to tell this News to the Disciples, Jesus bimself appeared to them, and spake familiarly to Mary Magdalene, who had been a constant Follower of him in his Lifetime, and on whom he had wrought a great Miracle of Healing. And this was the first time of his Appearing after his Refurrection.

faw a young man fitting on the right fide, clothed in along whitegarment; and they were affright-

6 And he faith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek lefus of Nazareth, whichwas crucified, he is risen, he is not here, behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his difciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, as he faid unto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the fepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed: neither faid they any thing toany man; for they wereafraid.

9 9 Now when Fesus was risen early, the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast feven devils,

10 And

<sup>\*</sup> This Circumstance is mention'd by St. Matthew, Ch. 28. 2. But contracted by St. Luke, Ch. 24. 4. and by St. John, Ch. 20. 11, and 12. See alfothe Note on Luke 24. 4.

n

ht

ig id

it-

th

ot

ek

h,

ed,

old

ey

our

ſci-

hat

you

ere

as

rent

and

fe-

hey

vere

ther

ning

they

hen

ear-

y of

ap-

Mary

t of

cast

And

8. 2.

Ch.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been feen of her, believed not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and told it unto the refidue: neither believed they them,

14 ¶ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they fat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

15 And he faid unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gofpel to every creature.

10. Now at the first Sight of him,

Mary \* knew him not. But when \* 70. 20.

by his Discourse he had made himself 14.

known to her, and confirmed, by an

Ocular Demonstration, what the Angel had before told her; she went and

assured his Disciples, who were disconsolate and lamenting at his Death,

that he was certainly risen again and alive.

double Testimony, both of the Angels and of his own Appearing, yet doubted and could hardly believe it.

12. Afterward, Jesus appeared again, in the Form and Habit of a Stranger, to Two of his Disciples as they were walking into the Country. And when he had talk'd with them a good while, he at last made himself plainly known to them.

13. And these told the rest of the Disciples, how Jesus had appeared to Them also; and yet neither by this further Evidence, would they be perfectly convinced.

14. Again, after this, Jesus shewed himself to all the Eleven Apostles together, as they were sitting at Meat. And he reproved them for their Dulness, in not remembring the Promise which he had in his Life-time so often made them of Rising again; and for their Unbelies, in not crediting those who had already seen him after his Resurrection.

15. ¶. And thus, during all the Time between his Refurrection and Ascension, he continued appearing to his Disciples, confirming their Faith, and instructing them in the Nature of the Gospel, and the Means of Propagating it. And he said: Go ye into all Parts

Parts of the World, and Preach the Gospel to all Mankind.

16. He that embraces my Religion, and by Baptism enters into an Obligation to obey it, and lives accordingly; shall be faved. But he that rejects the Gospel, either by obstinate Unbelief, or by impenitent Disobedience; shall be damned.

17 & 18. And for the more speedy and effectual Propagation of the Gospel against all Opposition; ye shall be indued with such great and extraordinary Gifts of the Holy Ghost, as shall enable you to work all Kinds of Miracles for the Conviction of Unbelievers, and for the Establishment of the Truth.

19. ¶ And now, when Jesus had given these and many other the like Instructions and Promises to his Disciples for Forty Days together, he led them out into the Mount of Olives, and ascended visibly into Heaven in their Sight, and sat down at the Right hand of God the Father, having all Power in Heaven and Earth committed unto him for the good of his Church.

20. After which, the Disciples, being filled with the Holy Ghost, travelled from *Jerusalem* into all Parts of the World, preaching the Gospel every-where with wonderful Success, and confirming their Doctrine with undeniable Proofs.

16 He that believeth and is baptized, shall be faved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my Name shall they cast out devils, they shall speak with new tongues,

18 They shalltake up ferpents, and if they drink any deadly thing it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had fpoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and fat on the right hand of God.

went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with figns following. Amen.

The END.

p-fa-nat

1.

ms my aft mall

ke nd ny all ey he all af-ad n, up fat nd

nd ry ord m, he

enter enter enterente enterente enterente enterente enterente enterente enterente enterente enterente enterent